



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



3 2044 004 437 240

Econ 423.8.6

**Harvard College  
Library**



**FROM THE FUND GIVEN BY  
ROBERT PARKER CLAPP  
CLASS OF 1879  
FOR BOOKS ON ECONOMICS**











**CONVERSATIONS**  
**ON**  
**POLITICAL ECONOMY;**  
**.IN WHICH**  
**THE ELEMENTS OF THAT SCIENCE**  
**ARE**  
**FAMILIARLY EXPLAINED.**

---

**BY THE AUTHOR OF**  
***"CONVERSATIONS ON CHEMISTRY."***

---

**FIFTH EDITION,**  
**REVISED AND ENLARGED.**

---

**LONDON:**

**PRINTED FOR**  
**LONGMAN, HURST, REES, ORME, BROWN, AND GREEN,**  
**PATERNOSTER-BOW.**

**1824.**

Econ. 423.8.6  
B

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY

CLAPP FUND

July 1, 1931

London:  
Printed by A. & R. Spottiswoode,  
New-Street-Square.

1033

# PREFACE.

---

IN offering to the Public this small work, in which it is attempted to bring within the reach of young persons a science which no English writer has yet presented in an easy and familiar form, the author is far from inferring, from the unexpected success of a former elementary work, on the subject of Chemistry, that the present attempt is likely to be received with equal favor. Political Economy, though so immediately connected with the happiness and improvement of mankind, and the object of so much controversy and speculation among men of knowledge, is not yet become a popular science, and is not generally considered as a study essential to early education. This work, therefore, independently of all its defects, will have to contend against the novelty of the pursuit with young persons of either sex, for the instruction of whom it is especially intended. If,

however, it should be found useful, and if, upon the whole, the doctrines it contains should appear sound and sufficiently well explained, the author flatters herself that this attempt will not be too severely judged. She hopes it will be remembered that in devising the plan of this work, she was in a great degree obliged to form the path she has pursued, and had scarcely any other guide in this popular mode of viewing the subject, than the recollection of the impressions she herself experienced when she first turned her attention to this study; though she has subsequently derived great assistance from the kindness of a few friends, who revised her sheets as she advanced in the undertaking.

As to the principles and materials of the work, it is so obvious that they have been obtained from the writings of the great masters who have treated this subject, and more particularly from those of Dr. Adam Smith, of Mr. Malthus, M. Say, M. Sismondi, Mr. Ricardo, and Mr. Blake, that the author has not thought it necessary to

load these pages with repeated acknowledgments and incessant references.

It will immediately be perceived by those to whom the subject is not new, that a few of the most abstruse questions and controversies in Political Economy have been entirely omitted, and that others have been stated and discussed without any positive conclusion being deduced. This is a defect unavoidably attached not only to the author's limited knowledge, but also to the *real difficulty of the science*. In general, however, when the soundness of a doctrine has appeared well established, it has been stated conscientiously, without any excess of caution or reserve, and with the sole object of diffusing useful truths.

It has often been a matter of doubt among the author's literary advisers, whether the form of dialogues, which was adopted in the *Conversations on Chemistry*, should be preserved in this Essay. She has, however, ultimately decided for the affirm-



ative; not that she particularly studied to introduce strict consistency of character, or uniformity of intellect, in the remarks of her pupil,—an attempt which might have often impeded the elucidation of the subject; but because it gave her an opportunity of introducing objections, and placing in various points of view questions and answers as they had actually occurred to her own mind,—a plan which would not have suited a more didactic composition. It will be observed accordingly, that the colloquial form is not here confined to the mere intersection of the argument by questions and answers, as in common school-books; but that the questions are generally the vehicle of some collateral remarks contributing to illustrate the subject; and that they are in fact such as would be likely to arise in the mind of an intelligent young person, fluctuating between the impulse of her heart and the progress of her reason, and naturally imbued with all the prejudices and popular feelings of uninformed benevolence.

# TABLE

## OF

### CONTENTS.

---

CONVERSATION	I. INTRODUCTION	<i>Page 1</i>
_____	II. INTRODUCTION— <i>continued</i>	17
_____	III. ON PROPERTY - -	30
_____	IV. PROPERTY— <i>continued</i>	52
_____	V. ON THE DIVISION OF LA-	
	BOUR - - - -	67
_____	VI. ON CAPITAL - - -	88
_____	VII. CAPITAL— <i>continued</i> -	106
_____	VIII. ON WAGES AND POPU-	
	LATION - - - -	120
_____	IX. WAGES AND POPULATION	
	— <i>continued</i> - -	142
_____	X. ON THE CONDITION OF	
	THE POOR - - -	162

CONVERSATION XI.	ON REVENUE	Page 183
————— XII.	REVENUE FROM LAND-	
	ED PROPERTY -	202
————— XIII.	REVENUE FROM THE	
	CULTIVATION OF	
	LAND - - -	237
————— XIV.	REVENUE FROM CA-	
	PITAL LENT - -	273
————— XV.	ON VALUE AND PRICE	296
————— XVI.	ON MONEY - -	326
————— XVII.	MONEY— <i>continued</i>	351
————— XVIII.	COMMERCE - -	374
————— XIX.	ON FOREIGN TRADE	394
————— XX.	FOREIGN TRADE—	
	<i>continued</i> - - -	415
————— XXI.	FOREIGN TRADE—	
	<i>continued</i> - - -	429
————— XXII.	ON EXPENDITURE -	451

# CONVERSATION I.

---

## INTRODUCTION.

ERRORS ARISING FROM TOTAL IGNORANCE OF POLITICAL ECONOMY. — ADVANTAGES RESULTING FROM THE KNOWLEDGE OF ITS PRINCIPLES. — DIFFICULTIES TO BE SURMOUNTED IN THIS STUDY.

---

MRS. B.

**W**E differ so much respecting the merit of the passage you mentioned this morning, that I cannot help suspecting some inaccuracy in the quotation.

CAROLINE.

Then pray allow me to read it to you ; it is immediately after the return of Telemachus to Salentum, when he expresses his astonishment to Mentor at the change that has taken place since his former visit ; he says, “ Has any misfortune happened to Salentum in my absence ? the magnificence and splendour in which I left it have dis-

appeared. I see neither silver, nor gold, nor jewels ; the habits of the people are plain, the buildings are smaller and more simple, the arts languish, and the city is become a desert." — " Have you observed," replied Mentor with a smile, " the state of the country that lies round it ?" — " Yes," said Telemachus, " I perceive that agriculture is become an honourable profession, and that there is not a field uncultivated." — " And which is best," replied Mentor, " a superb city, abounding with marble, gold, and silver, with a steril and neglected country ; or a country in a state of high cultivation, and fruitful as a garden, with a city where decency has taken place of pomp ? A great city full of artificers, who are employed only to effeminate the manners, by furnishing the superfluities of luxury, surrounded by a poor and uncultivated country, resembles a monster with a head of enormous size, and a withered, enervated body, without beauty, vigour, or proportion. The genuine strength and true riches of a kingdom consist in the number of people, and the plenty of provisions ; and innumerable people now cover the whole territory of Idomeneus, which they cultivate with unwearied diligence and assiduity. His dominions may be considered as one town, of which Salentum is the centre ; for the people that were wanting in the fields, and superfluous in the city, we have removed from the city to the fields."

Well — must I proceed, or have I read enough to convince you that Mentor is right?

MRS. B.

I still persist in my opinion ; for though some of the sentiments in this passage are perfectly just, yet the general principle on which they are founded, that town and country thrive at the expence of each other, I believe to be quite erroneous ; I am convinced, on the contrary, that flourishing cities are the means of fertilising the fields around them. Do you see any want of cultivation in the neighbourhood of London ? or can you name any highly improved country which does not abound with wealthy and populous cities ? On the other hand, what is more common than to observe decayed cities environed by barren and ill-cultivated lands ? The purple and gold of Tyre during the prosperity of the Phœnicians, far from depriving the fields of their labourers, obliged that nation to colonise new countries as a provision for its excess of population.

CAROLINE.

That is going very far back for an example.

MRS. B.

If you wish to come down to a later period, compare the ancient flourishing state of Phœnicia,

with its present wretchedness, so forcibly described by Volney in his travels.

CAROLINE.

Has not this wretchedness been produced by violent revolutions, which, during a course of ages have impoverished that devoted country, and does it not continue in consequence of the detestable policy of its present masters? But in the natural and undisturbed order of things, is it not clear that the greater number of labourers a sovereign should, after the example of Idomeneus, compel to quit the town in order to work in the country, the better that country would be cultivated?

MRS. B.

I do not think so ; I am of opinion, on the contrary, that the people thus compelled to quit the town, would not find work in the country.

CAROLINE.

And why not?

MRS. B.

Because there would already be as many labourers in the country as could find employment.

CAROLINE.

In England that might possibly be the case, but would it be so in badly-cultivated countries?

MRS. B.

I think it would.

CAROLINE.

Do you mean to say that if a country which is ill-cultivated were provided with a greater number of labourers it would not be improved? You must allow that this requires some explanation.

MRS. B.

It does so, and perhaps even more than you imagine; for you cannot well understand this question without some knowledge of the principles of political economy.

CAROLINE.

I am very sorry to hear that, for I confess that I have a sort of antipathy to political economy.

MRS. B.

Are you sure that you understand what is meant by political economy?

CAROLINE.

I believe so, as it is very often the subject of conversation at home; but it appears to me the most uninteresting of all subjects. It is about custom-houses, and trade, and taxes, and bounties, and smuggling, and paper-money, and the bullion-committee, &c. which I cannot hear named without



yawning. Then there is a perpetual reference to the works of Adam Smith, whose name is never uttered without such veneration, that I was induced one day to look into his work on Political Economy to gain some information on the subject of corn, but what with forestalling, regrating, duties, drawbacks, and limiting prices, I was so overwhelmed by a jargon of unintelligible terms, that after running over a few pages I threw the book away in despair, and resolved to eat my bread in humble ignorance. So if our argument respecting town and country relates to political economy, I fancy that I must be contented to yield the point in dispute without understanding it.

MRS. B.

Well, then, if you can remain satisfied with your ignorance of political economy you should at least make up your mind to forbear from talking of it, since you cannot do it to any purpose.

CAROLINE.

I assure you that requires very little effort; I only wish that I was as certain of never hearing the subject mentioned as I am of never talking upon it myself.

MRS. B.

Do you recollect how heartily you laughed at

poor Mr. Jourdain in the *Bourgeois Gentilhomme*, when he discovered that he had been speaking in prose all his life without knowing it? — Well, my dear, you frequently talk of political economy without knowing it. But a few days since I heard you deciding on the very question of the scarcity of corn; and it must be confessed that your verdict was in perfect unison with your present profession of ignorance.

CAROLINE.

Indeed I only repeated what I had heard from very sensible people, that the farmers had a great deal of corn; that if they were compelled to bring it to market there would be no scarcity, and that they kept it back with a view to their own interest, in order to raise the price. Surely it does not require a knowledge of political economy to speak on so common, so interesting a subject as this first necessary of life.

MRS. B.

The very circumstance of its general interest renders it one of the most important branches of political economy. Unfortunately for your resolution, this science spreads into so many ramifications that you will seldom hear a conversation amongst liberal-minded people without some reference to it. It was but yesterday that you accused the Birming-

ham manufacturers of cruelty and injustice towards their workmen, and asserted that the rate of wages should be proportioned by law to that of provisions; in order that the poor might not be sufferers by a rise in the price of bread. I dare say you thought that you had made a very rational speech when you so decided?

CAROLINE.

And was I mistaken? You begin to excite my curiosity, Mrs. B.; do you think I shall ever be tempted to study this science?

MRS. B.

I do not know; but I have no doubt that I shall convince you of your incapacity to enter on most subjects of general conversation, whilst you remain in total ignorance of it; and that however guarded you may be, that ignorance will be betrayed, and may frequently expose you to ridicule. During the riots of Nottingham I recollect hearing you condemn the invention of machines, which, by abridging labour, throw a number of workmen out of employment. Your opinion was founded upon mistaken principles of benevolence. In short, my dear, so many things are more or less connected with the science of political economy, that if you persevere in your resolution, you might almost as well condemn yourself to perpetual silence.

CAROLINE.

I should at least be privileged to talk about dress, amusements, and such lady-like topics.

MRS. B.

I have heard no trifling degree of ignorance of political economy betrayed in a conversation on dress. "What a pity," said one lady, "that French lace should be so dear; for my part I make no scruple of smuggling it; there is really a great satisfaction in cheating the custom-house." Another wondered she could so easily reconcile smuggling to her conscience; that she thought French laces and silks, and all French goods, should be totally prohibited; that she was determined never to wear any thing from foreign countries, let it be ever so beautiful; and that it was shameful to encourage foreign manufactures whilst our own poor were starving.

CAROLINE.

What fault can you find with the latter opinion? It appears to me to be replete with humanity and patriotism.

MRS. B.

The benevolence of the lady I do not question; but without knowledge to guide and sense to regulate the feelings, the best intentions will be frustrated. The science of political economy is

intimately connected with the daily occurrences of life, and in this respect differs materially from that of chemistry, astronomy, or any of the natural sciences; the mistakes we may fall into in the latter sciences can have little sensible effect upon our conduct, whilst our ignorance of the former may lead us into serious practical errors.

There is scarcely any history or any account of voyages or travels that does not abound with facts and opinions, the bearings of which cannot be understood without some previous acquaintance with the principles of political economy: besides, should the author himself be deficient in this knowledge, you will be continually liable to adopt his errors from inability to detect them. This was your case in reading *Telemachus*. Ignorance of the principles of political economy is to be discovered in some of the most elegant and sensible of our writers, especially amongst the poets. That beautiful composition of Goldsmith, the *Deserted Village*, is full of errors of this description, which, from its great popularity, are very liable to mislead the ill-informed.

CAROLINE.

I should almost regret to learn any thing which would lower that beautiful poem in my estimation.

MRS. B.

Its intrinsic merit as a poem is quite sufficient to

atone for any errors in scientific principles. Truth is not, you know, essential to poetic beauty ; but it is essential that we should be able to distinguish between truth and fiction.

CAROLINE.

Well, after all, Mrs. B., ignorance of political economy is a very excusable deficiency in women. It is the business of Government to reform the prejudices and errors which prevail respecting it ; and as we are never likely to become legislators, is it not just as well that we should remain in happy ignorance of evils which we have no power to remedy ?

MRS. B.

When you plead in favour of ignorance, there is a strong presumption that you are in the wrong. If a more general knowledge of political economy prevented women from propagating errors respecting it, in the education of their children, no trifling good would ensue. Childhood is spent in acquiring ideas, adolescence in discriminating and rejecting those which are false ; how greatly we should facilitate this labour by diminishing the number of errors imbibed in early youth, and by inculcating such ideas only as are founded in truth.

CAROLINE.

Surely you would not teach political economy to children?

MRS. B.

I would wish that mothers were so far competent to teach it, that their children should not have any thing to unlearn; and if they could convey such lessons of political economy as Miss Edgeworth gives in her story of the Cherry Orchard, no one I should think would esteem such information beyond the capacity of a child.

CAROLINE.

I thought I remembered that story perfectly, but I do not recollect in it a single word relative to political economy.

MRS. B.

The author has judiciously avoided naming the science, but that little tale contains a simple and beautiful exposition of the division of labour, the merit of which you would more highly appreciate if you were acquainted with its application to political economy. You would perhaps also allow children to hear the story of King Midas, whose touch converted every thing into gold.

CAROLINE.

Is that also a lesson of political economy? I

think, Mrs. B., you have the art of converting every thing you touch into that science.

MRS. B.

It is not art, but the real nature of things. The story of King Midas shows, that gold alone does not constitute wealth, and that it is valuable only as it bears a due proportion to the more immediately useful productions of the earth.

CAROLINE.

But children will not be the wiser for such stories unless you explain their application to political economy. You must give them the *moral* of the fable.

MRS. B.

The *moral* is the only part of a fable which children never read; and in this they are perfectly right, for a principle abstractedly laid down is beyond their comprehension. The application will be made as they advance in life. Childhood is the period for sowing the seed, not forcing the fruit; you must wait the due season if you mean to gather a ripe and plentiful harvest.

CAROLINE.

Well, my dear Mrs. B., what must I do? You know that I am fond of instruction, and that I am not afraid of application. You may recollect what



pleasure I took in the study of chemistry. If you could persuade me that political economy would be as interesting, and not more difficult, I would beg of you to put me in the way of learning it. Are there any lectures given on this subject? or could one take lessons of a master? for as to studying scientific books, I am discouraged by the difficulty of the terms: when the language as well as the subject is new, there are too many obstacles to contend with at first setting out.

MRS. B.

The language of a science is frequently its most difficult part, but in political economy there are but few technical terms, and those you will easily comprehend. Indeed, you have already a considerable stock of information on this subject, but your notions are so confused and irregular, such a mixture of truth and error, that your business will rather be to select, separate, and methodise what you already know, than to acquire new ideas. It is not in my power to recommend you a master on this subject, for there are none—perhaps because there are no pupils. Those who seek for instruction on political economy, read the works written on that science, particularly the treatise of Adam Smith.\* Lectures on political economy have

\* An excellent treatise on political economy has more recently been published in French by M. Say.

occasionally been given at the universities, especially at Edinburgh, and many of the students there are well versed in this science, as they turn their attention to it at an age when the mind is not yet strongly biassed by prejudice.

CAROLINE.

But what then am I to do, Mrs. B.? I cannot attend those lectures, and I fear I shall never have courage to undertake the study of treatises which appear to me so difficult.

MRS. B.

Perhaps I may be able to smooth the way for you. It has been my good fortune to have passed a great part of my life in a society where this science has been a frequent topic of discussion, and the interest I took in it has induced me to study its principles in the works of the best writers on the subject; but I must tell you fairly, that I did not commence my studies by opening these works at random, or by consulting Adam Smith on an insulated point, before I had examined his plan, or understood his object. I knew that in order to learn I must begin at the beginning, and if you are of opinion that my experience can be of any service to you, and will be content to receive an explanation in a familiar manner of what has been discussed or investigated by men of acknowledged talent and learning, I will attempt to guide you through the

first elements of the science, without, however, presuming to penetrate into its abstruse parts.

CAROLINE.

Well, then, I am quite decided to make the attempt; you are but too good to me, Mrs. B., to allow me again to become your pupil. You have so much indulgence, however, that I am never afraid of exposing my ignorance by my enquiries, though I fear I shall put your patience to a severe test.

## CONVERSATION II.

---

### INTRODUCTION — *continued.*

DEFINITION OF POLITICAL ECONOMY. — RISE AND PROGRESS OF SOCIETY. — CONNECTION BETWEEN POLITICAL ECONOMY AND MORALITY. — DEFINITION OF WEALTH.

---

CAROLINE.

I HAVE been thinking a great deal of political economy since yesterday, my dear Mrs. B., but I fear not to much purpose : at least I am no farther advanced than to the discovery of a great confusion of ideas which prevails in my mind on the subject. This science seems to comprehend every thing, and yet I own, that I am still at a loss to understand what it is. Cannot you give me a short explanation of it, that I may have some clear ideas to begin with ?

MRS. B.

I once heard a lady ask a philosopher to tell her in a few words what is meant by political economy. Madam, replied he, you understand perfectly what is meant by household economy, you need only ex-

tend your idea of the economy of a family to that of a whole people—of a nation, and you will have some comprehension of the nature of political economy.

CAROLINE.

Considering that he was limited to a few words, do you not think that he acquitted himself extremely well? But as I have a little more patience than this lady, I hope you will indulge me with a more detailed explanation of this universal science.

MRS. B.

Political economy treats of the formation, the distribution, and the consumption of wealth; it teaches us the causes which promote or prevent its increase, and their influence on the happiness or misery of society.

In a country of savages, you find a small number of inhabitants spread over a vast tract of land. Depending on the precarious subsistence afforded by fishing and hunting, they are subject to frequent dearths and famines, by which great numbers are destroyed; they rear but few children, for want cuts them off in their early years; the aged and infirm are often put to death, rather from motives of humanity than of cruelty; for the hunter's life requiring a great extent of country, and long and perilous excursions in quest of food, they would be wholly incapable of following the young and robust,

and would die of hunger, or become a prey to wild beasts.

If these savages apply themselves to pasturage, their means of subsistence are brought within narrower limits, requiring only that degree of wandering necessary to provide fresh food for their cattle. Their flocks ensuring them a more easy subsistence, their families begin to increase; they lose in a great measure their ferocity, and a considerable improvement takes place in their character.

By degrees the art of tillage is discovered, a small tract of ground becomes capable of feeding a greater relative number of people; the necessity of wandering in search of food is superseded; families begin to settle in fixed habitations, and the arts of social life are introduced and cultivated.

In the savage state, scarcely any form of government is established; the people seem to be under no control but that of their military chiefs in time of war.

The possession of flocks and herds in the pastoral state introduces property, and laws are necessary for its security; the elders and leaders of these wandering tribes therefore begin to establish laws, to violate which is to commit a crime, and to incur a punishment. This is the origin of social order; and when in the third state the people settle in fixed habitations, the laws gradually as-

sume the more regular form of a monarchical or republican government. Every thing now wears a new aspect; industry flourishes, the arts are invented, the use of the metals is discovered; labour is subdivided, every one applies himself more particularly to a distinct employment, in which he becomes skilful. Thus, by slow degrees, this people of savages, whose origin was so rude and miserable, become a civilised people, who occupy a highly cultivated country, intersected by fine roads, leading to wealthy and populous cities, and carrying on an extensive trade both at home and with other countries.

CAROLINE.

This is a very pleasing outline of the history of the rise and progress of civilisation: but I should like to see it a little more filled up.

MRS. B.

The subject you will find hereafter sufficiently developed; for the whole business of political economy is to study the causes which have thus co-operated to enrich and civilise a nation. This science is, therefore, essentially founded upon history, — not the history of sovereigns, of wars, and of intrigues; but the history of the arts, of trade, of discoveries, and of civilisation. We see some countries, like America, increase rapidly in wealth

and prosperity, whilst others, like Egypt and Syria, are impoverished, depopulated, and falling to decay: when the causes which produce these various effects are well understood, some judgment may be formed of the measures which governments have adopted to contribute to the welfare of their people; whether such or such a branch of commerce should be encouraged in preference to others; whether it be proper to prohibit this or that kind of merchandise; whether any peculiar encouragement should be given to agriculture; whether it be right to establish by law the price of provisions or the price of labour, or whether they should be left without control; and so on.

You see therefore, that political economy consists of two parts,—theory and practice; the science and the art. The science comprehends a knowledge of the facts which we have enumerated: the art relates more particularly to legislation, and consists in doing whatever is requisite to contribute to the increase of national wealth, and avoiding whatever would be prejudicial to it. Mistakes in theory lead to errors in practice. When we enter into details we shall have occasion to observe that governments, misled by false ideas of political economy, have frequently arrested the natural progress of wealth when it was in their power to have accelerated it.



CAROLINE.

But since the world was originally a rude wilderness, and yet has arrived at the improved state of civilisation in which we now find it, the errors of governments cannot have been very prejudicial.

MRS. B.

The natural causes which tend to develop the wealth and prosperity of nations are more powerful than the faults of administration, which operate in a contrary direction. But it is nevertheless true that these errors are productive of a great deal of mischief; that they check industry and retard the progress of improvement. Under bad governments particular classes of people are favoured, others discouraged and oppressed: prosperity is thus unequally shared, and riches unfairly distributed. You look very grave, Caroline; do you already begin to grow tired of the subject?

CAROLINE.

Oh no; I think thus far I have understood you: but before we proceed you must allow me to mention an objection which, I confess, distresses me; if it is well founded I shall be quite at variance with the maxims of political economy, and that science will no longer retain any interest for me. I find that you are constantly talking of wealth; of the causes which produce it; of the means of augment-

ing it. To be rich, very rich, richer than other people, seems to be the great aim of political economy. Whilst religion and morality teach us that we should moderate the thirst of gain, that inordinate love of wealth is the source of all crimes. Besides that, it is very evident that the richest people are not always the happiest. Now, if wealth does not conduce to the happiness of individuals, how can it constitute that of nations? A poor but virtuous people is surely happier than a rich and vicious one. What remarkable examples do we not see of this in history. We are taught to admire the Greek republics, who despised the pomp and luxury of wealth. And then the Romans; during the early part of their history they were poor and virtuous, but the acquisition of wealth depraved their character, and rendered them the slaves of tyrants. Now political economy appears to me to induce the love of riches, and to consider it as the only end to be attained by government.

MRS. B.

This is a most alarming attack upon political economy! When, however, you understand it better, you will find that your censure is unfounded. At present you must take my word for it, as I cannot show you the benefits arising from just principles of political economy, before you are acquainted with the principles themselves; but I can

assure you that they all tend to promote the happiness of nations, and the purest morality. I do not pretend to deny that wealth, like almost every other human good, is liable to abuse; and the Greeks and Romans may, perhaps, in a great measure, owe their degradation to the ill use which they made of their ill-gotten wealth; for it should be observed, that their riches were obtained by rapine and plunder, and that they did not arise from the gradual and natural growth of industry, in which case alone they spread happiness around, creating new desires by offering new gratifications. But history acquaints us more with the sovereign than with the people. In order to be able to form a just estimate of the morals and manners of a country, we must avail ourselves also of the information of travellers, and we shall generally find, that the poorer and ruder societies of mankind are proportionally miserable in their condition, ferocious in their manners, and vicious in their morals.

That wealth is not sufficient to constitute the happiness of a people, I most readily admit; it is but one among a number of causes which conduce to it. Social happiness is the result of a pure religion, good morals, a wise government, and a general diffusion of knowledge. Without such advantages, wealth can never be enjoyed. But these are subjects upon which we can touch only incidentally. They constitute the science of general

politics, and our attention is to be particularly directed to political economy, which is but a branch of it, and treats especially of the means of promoting social happiness so far as relates to the acquisition, possession, and use of the objects which constitute national wealth. Political economy tends to moderate all unjustifiable ambition, by showing that the surest means of increasing national prosperity are peace, security, and justice ; that jealousy between nations is as prejudicial as between individuals ; that each finds its advantage in reciprocal benefits ; and that far from growing rich at each other's expense, they mutually assist each other by a liberal system of commerce. Political economy is particularly inimical to the envious, jealous, and malignant passions ; and if ever peace and moderation should flourish in the world, it is to enlightened views of this science that we should be indebted for the miracle.

But, my dear Caroline, I suspect that there is some error in your idea of riches. What do you call riches ?

CAROLINE.

To be rich is to have a great income ; to be able to spend a great deal more than other people.

MRS. B.

You speak of the riches of individuals ; of comparative wealth. A rich man in one class of so-

ciety might be poor in another. But this is not the definition that I asked for — what do you understand by riches in general — in what does wealth consist?

CAROLINE.

Oh, I suppose, you mean money? — I should say wealth consists in gold and silver.

MRS. B.

Consider what would be the situation of a country which possessed no other wealth than money. Do you recollect in what estimation Robinson Crusoe held his bag of gold when he was wrecked upon a desert island?

CAROLINE.

True: but in an island which is not desert, money will purchase whatever you want.

MRS. B.

Then I should say that the things which we are desirous to procure with money, such as land, houses, furniture, clothes, food, &c. constitute riches, as well as the money by which they are obtained.

CAROLINE.

Certainly: these are clearly the things which constitute real wealth; for unless we could procure the necessaries of life with gold and silver,

they would be of no more use to us than lead or iron.

MRS. B.

We may therefore say that wealth comprehends every article of utility, convenience, or luxury. This includes every object of our wishes which can become an article of commerce; such as landed estates, houses, the products of agriculture, those of manufactures, provisions, domestic animals, in a word, whatever can contribute to the welfare and enjoyment of man.

CAROLINE.

Why should you confine your definition of wealth to things that can become articles of commerce?

MRS. B.

Because there are many countries where the earth spontaneously produces things which can neither be consumed nor sold; and however valuable such things would be to us, could we obtain them, they cannot, under those circumstances, be considered as wealth. The herds of wild cattle, for instance, which feed on the rich pastures called the Pampas, in South America, are of this description. Many of those extensive tracts of land are uninhabited, and the cattle that range at large over them are of no value. Parties of hunters occasionally make incursions, and destroy some of them for

their hides and fat, whilst the flesh, which we should esteem most valuable, is either left to putrify on the ground, or is used as fuel to melt the fat for the purposes of tallow, which being transported to places where it can be sold and consumed, it acquires value and becomes wealth.

In other parts of America the grass of rich pastures is burnt on the ground, there being no cattle to consume it.

CAROLINE.

This may be the case in wild and uncultivated countries; but in those which are civilised, any land yielding unsaleable produce would be converted by the proprietor to some other use.

MRS. B.

I have heard that the fruit of many of the vineyards in France was not gathered a few years ago, the grapes being so much reduced in value in consequence of a decree prohibiting the exportation of French wines, that the price at which they could be sold would not pay the expense of gathering them. In England, also, when all kinds of colonial produce were excluded from the continent of Europe, coffee is said to have been thrown into the sea, because it would not pay the charges on being landed. You see, therefore, that the effects of war, or other circumstances, may for a

time, in any country, destroy the value of commodities.

CAROLINE.

How very much you have already extended my conception of the meaning of wealth ! And yet I can perceive that all these ideas were floating confusedly in my mind before. In speaking of wealth we ought not to confine ourselves to the consideration of the relative wealth of individuals, but extend our views to whatever constitutes riches in general, without any reference to the inequality of the division.

All this is perfectly clear : no one can be really ignorant of it ; it requires only reflection ; and yet at first I was quite at a loss to explain the nature of wealth.

MRS. B.

The confusion has arisen from the common practice of estimating riches by money, instead of observing that wealth consists in such commodities as are useful or agreeable to mankind, of which gold and silver constitute but a very small portion.



## CONVERSATION III.

---

### ON PROPERTY.

LABOUR THE ORIGIN OF WEALTH.—LEGAL INSTITUTION OF PROPERTY.—OF LANDED PROPERTY.—SECURITY THE RESULT OF PROPERTY.—OBJECTIONS TO LANDED PROPERTY ANSWERED.—ORIGIN OF NATIONS IN A SAVAGE OR PASTORAL LIFE.—THEIR PROGRESS IN AGRICULTURE.—CULTIVATION OF CORN.—RECAPITULATION.

---

#### CAROLINE.

**W**ELL, my dear Mrs. B., since you have reconciled me to wealth, and convinced me how essential it is to the happiness and prosperity of nations, I begin to grow impatient to learn what are the best means of obtaining this desirable object.

#### MRS. B.

Do not leave every thing to me, Caroline ; I have told you that you were not without some

general notions of political economy, though they are but ill arranged in your mind. Endeavour, therefore, to unravel the entangled thread, and discover yourself what are the principal causes of the production of wealth in a nation.

CAROLINE.

I assure you that I have been reflecting a great deal upon the subject. I do not know whether I am right, but I think it is *labour* which is the cause of wealth. Without labour the earth would yield but very little for our subsistence. How insignificant are its spontaneous productions compared with those derived from agriculture! The crab with the apple; the barren heath with the rich pasture of the meadow!

MRS. B.

It is very true that labour is a most essential requisite to the creation of wealth, and yet it does not necessarily insure its production. The labour of the savage who possesses no wealth is often more severe than that of our common ploughman, whose furrows team with riches. The long and perilous excursions of savages in search of prey; the difficulty which, from want of skill, they must encounter in every process of industry, in constructing the simplest habitations, fabricating the rudest implements; — all concur to increase their

toil. Labour is the lot of man; whether in a barbarous or a civilised state, he is destined to earn his bread by the sweat of his brow. But how is it that in the one case labour is productive of great wealth, whilst in the other it affords barely the necessaries of life?

CAROLINE.

You have observed that the labour of the savage is less advantageous on account of his ignorance and want of skill; besides, he works neither with the activity and zeal, nor with the steady perseverance of men in civilised society. Savages, you know, are proverbially noted for their idleness.

MRS. B.

Inducements must then be found to rouse them from that idleness; motives to awaken their industry and habituate them to regular labour. Men are naturally disposed to indolence; all exertion requires effort, and efforts are not made without an adequate stimulus. The activity we behold in civilised life is the effect of education; it results from a strong and general desire to share not only in the necessaries of life, but in the various comforts and enjoyments with which we are surrounded. The man who has reaped the reward, as well as undergone the fatigues of daily exertion, willingly renews his efforts, as he thus renews his enjoyments.

But the ignorance of a savage precludes all desires which do not lead to the immediate gratification of his wants; he sees no possessions which tempt his ambition — no enjoyments which inflame his desires; nothing less than the strong impulse of want rouses him to exertion; and, having satisfied the cravings of hunger, he lies down to rest without a thought of the future.

CAROLINE.

But if the desires of savages are so few and so easily satisfied, may not their state be happier than that of the labouring classes in civilised countries, who wish for so much, and obtain so little?

MRS. B.

The brutish apathy which results from gross ignorance can scarcely deserve the name of content, and is utterly unworthy that of happiness. Goldsmith, in his Traveller, justly as well as beautifully observes, that

“ Every want that stimulates the breast  
Becomes a source of pleasure when redress’d.”

Besides, it is only occasionally that a savage can indulge in this state of torpid indifference. If you consult any account of travels in a savage country, you will be satisfied that our peasantry enjoy a comparative state of affluence and even of luxury.

But let us suppose a civilised being to come among a tribe of savages, and succeed in teaching some of them the arts of life — he instructs one how to render his hut more commodious, another to collect a little store of provisions for the winter, a third to improve the construction of his bows and arrows; what would be the consequences?

CAROLINE.

One might expect that the enjoyment derived from these improvements would lead their countrymen to adopt them, and would introduce a general spirit of industry.

MRS. B.

Is it not more probable that the idle savages would, either by force or fraud, wrest from the industrious their hard-earned possessions; that the one would be driven from the hut he had constructed with so much labour, another robbed of the provisions he had stored, and a third would see his well-pointed arrows aimed at his own breast? Here then is a fatal termination to all improvement. Who will work to procure such precarious possessions, which expose him to danger, instead of ensuring his enjoyment?

CAROLINE.

But all this would be prevented if laws were made for the protection of property.

MRS. B.

True; but the *right* of property must be established, before it can be protected. For nature has given mankind every thing in common, and property is of human institution. It takes place in such early stages of society that one is apt to imagine it of natural origin; but until it has been established by law, no man has a right to call any thing his own.

CAROLINE.

What, not the game he has killed, the hut he has built, or the implements he has constructed? These may be wrested from him by force; but he who thus obtains them acquires no right to them.

MRS. B.

When a man has produced any thing by his labour, he has, no doubt, in equity the fairest claim to it; but his right to separate it from the common stock of nature, and appropriate it to his own use, depends entirely upon the law of the land.

In the case of property in land, for instance, it is the law which decrees that such a piece of ground shall belong to Thomas, such another to John, and a third to James; that these men shall have an exclusive right to the possession of the land and of its produce; that they may keep, sell, or exchange it; give it away during their lives, or

bequeath it after their deaths. And, in order that this law should be respected, punishments are enacted for those who should transgress it. It is not until such laws have been made for the institution and protection of property, of whatever description it be, that the right of property is established.

CAROLINE.

You astonish me ! I thought that property in land had always existed ; I had no idea that it was a legal institution, but imagined that it had originated from the earliest period of the world. We read that in the time of the ancient patriarchs, when families became too numerous, they separated ; and that those who went to settle elsewhere, fed their flocks, and occupied the land without molestation. There was no one to dispute their right to it ; and after their deaths the children inhabited and cultivated the land of their fathers.

If we were to found a colony in a desert island, every man would cultivate as much ground as he wanted for his own use, and each having an equal interest in the preservation of his possessions, property would thus be established by general agreement, without any legal institution.

MRS. B.

This general agreement is a kind of law ; a very imperfect one it is true, and which was perhaps

originally founded on the relative strength of individuals. If one man attempts to carry off the cattle or the fruits of another, the latter opposes force to force; if he is stronger or better armed, he either kills his antagonist or drives him away; if weaker, he is despoiled, or he calls in his neighbours to his succour, shows them the common danger, and may induce them to unite with him in taking vengeance on the aggressor.

• Many incidents of this nature must occur before regular laws are instituted; that is to say, before a public authority is established, which shall protect individuals against those who attack them, and punish the offenders. It is then only that a man may say, "This is my field; this is my house; this seed which I cast into the ground will bring forth an abundant provision for me and my family; these trees which I plant will every year yield us fruit, which we alone shall have a right to gather."

## CAROLINE.

I now comprehend perfectly the advantage of such laws — it is *security* — before they were established, the strong might wrest every thing from the weak; and old men, women, and children who had no means of defence, were exposed to their rapine and violence. The idle and improvident, when in want of subsistence, became the natural enemies of the laborious and industrious. So that



without this law the men who had toiled hardest would be most likely to fall victims to those who had done nothing. In a word, the wasps would devour the honey of the bees.

MRS. B.

Yes, *security* is the grand point; it is security which stimulates industry, and renders labour productive; every step towards security is a step towards civilisation, towards wealth, and towards general happiness.

CAROLINE.

All this is very true; yet an objection to the institution of property in land has just occurred to me which appears of considerable importance. Before land became private property, the earth, you say, was possessed in common by all mankind; every one had an equal claim to it. But the law which institutes landed property takes it from mankind at large, to give it to a few individuals; in order, therefore, to make some men rich, it makes others poor. Now what right has the law to dispossess some in order to enrich others? It should be just, before it is generous.

This objection, however, does not extend to any other than landed property; nothing is more fair than that men should gather the fruits of their labour; that they should possess the houses they

have built, the goods they have fabricated; but the land, it appears to me, cannot become private property without injury to others who are thus deprived of their natural right to it.

MRS. B.

You would then secure to every one the possession of the wealth he may acquire, though you would refuse him the means of producing it? You would make him master of his house, but take away the ground on which it stands; protect his harvests, but not allow him the property of a field in which he may raise his crops?

CAROLINE.

I must confess that you have placed my objection rather in a ludicrous point of view; but that is not enough, Mrs. B.; you must show me where the error lies, before I can consent to relinquish it. If it is necessary for the encouragement of industry that land should become private property, justice requires that it should be equally divided amongst all those who have a natural claim to it?

MRS. B.

In countries newly occupied, grants of land are usually made to those who are willing to reclaim it from a state of nature; it is in cases of conquest only, that land has been arbitrarily partitioned by the conqueror. Such was the fate of Europe when

over-run by the northern barbarians, who, by their division of land, laid the foundation of the feudal system.

But whatever may have been the original causes of the division of land, and whether or not it were equally apportioned at first, it is impossible to prevent inequality from arising afterwards.

CAROLINE.

Yet we read of laws having been instituted in several countries to preserve this equality, and in some instances with considerable success. In Rome, frequent attempts were made to this effect; and the Spartans, during a long series of years, rigorously persevered in the equal division of landed property.

MRS. B.

And what were the consequences of this attempt? At Rome the laws to prevent inequality of landed property proved ineffectual; in Sparta they produced a community of warriors, who tyrannised with cruelty over a population of slaves, and who were not possessed of a single virtue unallied to military glory.

Both the virtues and vices of mankind tend to destroy this equality; the laborious, the intelligent, and skilful, will raise plentiful harvests. Nature thus rewards their exertions. The possessions of the idle, the careless, and the ignorant,

will, on the contrary, gradually degenerate. Nature has annexed this penalty to their neglect. Shall we then counteract this wise dispensation of Providence by giving to the idle the reward of industry, and making the industrious bear a punishment due to the idle?

CAROLINE.

Yet poverty frequently arises from sickness and misfortune, which render men unable to work; and, under such circumstances, it is hard to suffer the penalty incurred by idleness.

MRS. B.

True; but you must consider also, that the inequality of condition, and the vicissitudes of human life, give rise to the exercise of almost every virtue — patience, resignation, fortitude, on the part of the afflicted; benevolence, compassion, generosity, charity, on that of the more prosperous of the community — feelings which purify and refine the enjoyment of wealth, and are amongst its highest gratifications.

Nature, for equally wise purposes, has dispensed her blessings with various degrees of munificence: in some instances she bestows them with unbounded and inexhaustible profusion. It is thus that she has given us light and air, which are alike possessed and enjoyed by all. No one ever thought of converting these elements into private property;

and if food were as easily obtained, and the human frame as readily supplied with nourishment as it is with the air we breathe, no one would ever have conceived the idea of separating from the common stock, and converting into private property, either the food he required, or the land on which it was produced.

CAROLINE.

How delightful that would be ! Labour would no longer be required ; and mankind would be transformed into a race of contemplative philosophers, whose only occupation would be to study and admire the works of nature !

MRS. B.

It is dangerous to trust to your judgment when it leads you to conclusions so different from the established course of nature. We must bear in mind that the dispensations of Providence are always wise and good, though it is not always in our power to trace their beneficial effects. In the present instance, however, the design of Providence appears sufficiently obvious. Were mankind not under the necessity of labouring for a subsistence, so far from becoming philosophers, I am inclined to think that they would ever have remained a race of indolent savages, scarcely raised above the brute creation. What motive would they have had for exertion, what incentive to awaken their faculties,

and rouse them from the apathy of indolence so natural to man? The necessity of regular industry to secure subsistence appears to be the first step towards the development of their faculties, both physical and mental. But we have observed that men will not be induced to cultivate the earth, so long as it is possessed in common, when the idle may reap the harvest sown by the hand of industry. Property in land is therefore of necessity a preliminary step to cultivation, and we have seen that cultivation could not take place were the earth unlimited in extent and powers of production. Let us then reflect, that when nature conferred this blessing upon us with a more sparing hand, than she has bestowed the other elements, it was doubtless with a view of rousing the latent faculties of man, and calling them into action; it was in order to raise him from a state of animal nature, in which he is assimilated to the beasts that perish, and urge him through a progressive course of improvement, during which new ideas are successively formed: the character is developed by reason, the mind strengthened by trials, chastened by adversity, elevated by piety, softened by social affections, enlarged by science, refined by literature, and brought at length to that state in which we discern the traces of a being destined for immortality.

CAROLINE.

*John  
L. ...  
...*

I am glad we arrive at the same satisfactory conclusion, the happiness of our fellow-creatures, by a safer road than that in which my imagination had first wandered. There remains no rational doubt in my mind of the advantages ~~resulting~~ from the division of land, and the accumulation of landed property; nor am I disposed to murmur at the larger share you have assigned to the more industrious and better part of mankind. I see that soon after the division of land these will infallibly become the most considerable possessors; that their property should be secured to them and to their heirs, and that in their hands it will be the most highly cultivated, and yield the greatest produce.

MRS. B.

The institution of property in land augments the wealth not only of the proprietors, but likewise of all other classes of men.

Lands may be considered as the instrument by which alone wealth is created; and we have just seen that the security of its possession gives life and vigour to industry: it is this security which raises the condition of our peasantry so much above that of a savage people who possess the land in common.

CAROLINE.

An institution of such evident and general utility cannot then be considered as unjust.

MRS. B.

Certainly not. It is by the test of general utility that the justice of all laws should be tried; for there are none which do not impose some restraint on the natural liberty of man, and which, in that point of view, might not be deemed objectionable. But without the control of laws, we have seen that neither the lives, the property, the reputation, nor even the liberty of men, are secure: we sacrifice therefore some portion of that liberty to the law; and, in return, it secures to us the remainder, together with every blessing which security can give. Blackstone, in his Commentaries, says, “ Every  
“ man, when he enters into society, gives up a part  
“ of his natural liberty, as the price of so valuable  
“ a purchase; and in consideration of receiving  
“ the advantages of mutual commerce, obliges  
“ himself to conform to those laws which the com-  
“ munity has thought proper to establish. For no  
“ man who considers a moment would wish to  
“ retain the absolute and uncontrolled power of  
“ doing whatever he pleases; the consequence of  
“ which is, that every other man would also have  
“ the same power, and there would be no security  
“ to individuals in any of the enjoyments of life:  
“ political, therefore, or civil liberty, which is that  
“ of a member of society, is no other than natura  
“ liberty, so far restrained by human laws (and no  
“ farther) as is necessary and expedient for the  
“ general advantage of the public.



“ That constitution or form of government, that  
“ system of laws, is alone calculated to maintain  
“ civil liberty, which leaves the subject entire  
“ master of his own conduct, except in those points  
“ wherein the public requires some direction or  
“ restraint.”

CAROLINE.

You have completely removed all my scruples respecting the institution of landed property. Mrs. B., let us now, therefore, return to the progress of wealth and civilisation.

MRS. B.

We must not proceed too rapidly ; for the progressive steps in the history of civilisation are extremely slow, and we must learn to view the development of human intellect and the progress of human industry in successive and almost insensible degrees.

Civilised nations generally originate from the settlement of a colony ; they seldom arise from a savage state. It was in this state we found the Indians on the discovery of America ; they were mere hunters ; and so long as men behold an unlimited space before them, in which they may wander without obstacle or control, it is difficult to conceive any circumstances which should lead them to adopt a settled mode of life, and apply themselves to tillage.

In countries abounding with large plains, the pastoral mode of life has prevailed; but for this purpose there must have been established property in cattle, though the land were possessed in common. Such was the case with the ancient Scythians, who inhabited the vast plains of Tartary, and with the modern Tartars and Arabs; who, to this day, are wandering tribes, and like the patriarchs of old, live in tents, and travel about with their flocks and herds in search of pasture.

We have observed that men were by nature disposed to idleness, and this disposition is necessarily a great obstacle to the introduction of agriculture; for it requires a considerable degree of foresight and knowledge, and a firm reliance on the security of property, to labour at one season in order to reap the fruits at another. We may suppose agriculture to be a progressive step from pastoral life; that a tribe of shepherds may have met with enemies in their wandering excursions, and the apprehensions of losing their flocks may have induced them to settle; they would probably choose a spot defended by nature from attacks of wild beasts, or the incursions of savage neighbours. Thus Cecrops pitched upon the rock on which the citadel of Athens is founded, to build a town. Or they may have been tempted by the attractions of some fruitful spot, under the protection of a neighbouring government able to defend them. Volney, in his

121 at  
before  
P. 121  
Volney

account of the wandering tribes in Syria, says, “As often as they find peace and security, and a possibility of procuring sufficient provisions in any district, they take up their residence in it, and insensibly adopt a settled life and the arts of cultivation.” These arts they must have attained by very slow degrees — they observed that fruit-trees may be multiplied; that nutritious plants may be propagated; that there are seeds which reproduce every year; and that a great variety of animals may be tamed and domesticated. Thus supplied with a new fund of subsistence, their children are better fed, their families increase, and age and infancy are protected and provided for.

But these people are yet acquainted with only the first elements of agriculture; how many fortunate chances must have occurred before they reached the important era of the cultivation of corn! Wild corn has nowhere been found; and the Greeks imagined that a divinity descended on earth, to introduce it, and to instruct them in the cultivation of this valuable plant. Athens, Crete, Sicily, and Egypt, all claim the merit of being the original cultivators of corn; but whoever are the people to whom we are indebted for this important discovery, or whatever are the means by which it was accomplished, there is none which has had so great an influence on the welfare of mankind. Feeble as it appears, this plant can resist the sum-

mer's heat and the winter's cold. It flourishes in almost every climate, and is adapted not only for the food of man, but for that of a great variety of domestic animals, and it yields by fermentation a pleasant and salubrious beverage. The grain will keep many years, and affords such a durable means of subsistence, that danger could no longer be apprehended in trusting to futurity, and plenty was secured during the longest and most unproductive winters.

But the cultivation of this inestimable plant cannot be undertaken without considerable funds, fixed habitations, implements of husbandry \*, domestic animals; in a word, establishments which could neither be created nor maintained without the institution of property. Savages have no corn, no cultivation, no domestic animals; they consume and destroy every thing without ever considering re-production;—and how different are the results! We now see millions of men and animals inhabiting an extent of country which would scarcely

\* These are at first of a very rude and imperfect construction. In some parts of India, the plough of a Hindoo, even to this day, is formed of a crooked stick very inartificially sharpened, and not unfrequently drawn by his wife. The use of domestic animals in agriculture is another step towards civilisation; but no farming establishment whatever could either be created or maintained without the institution of property.

have sufficed for the maintenance of two or three hundred savages.

CAROLINE.

Let us rest a little, my dear Mrs. B. I am almost bewildered with the number and variety of ideas that you have presented to my mind. I wonder that these things have not occurred to me before; but I have been so accustomed to see the world in its present improved state, that my attention was never drawn to the many obstacles and difficulties it must have encountered, and the laborious progressive steps it must have made, before society could have attained its present state of perfection.

MRS. B.

Perfection! comparatively speaking I suppose you mean; for it is not long since you were making lamentable complaints of the actual state of society; in which indeed I could not entirely agree with you, though I think that we are still far removed from perfection. But let us continue to trace the progress of wealth and civilisation up to their present state, before we begin to find any fault with existing institutions.

CAROLINE.

I think I have now a very clear idea of the important consequences which result from the estab-

lishment of property. It puts an end to the wandering life of barbarians, induces men to settle, and inures them to regular labour; it teaches them prudence and foresight; induces them to embellish the face of the earth by cultivation; to multiply the useful tribes of animals and nutritious plants; and in short, it enables them so prodigiously to augment the stock of subsistence, as to transform a country which contained but a few poor huts and a scanty population into a great and wealthy nation.

reciprocity between  
labor & prop.  
labor organ  
prop  
prop stimulates  
labor nec for  
building huts  
civil &  
wealthy  
nation

(so import  
between labor  
prop &  
prop defined  
as  
unemployed)  
D 2  
prop ← labor → prop

## CONVERSATION IV.

---

### ON PROPERTY — *continued.*

EFFECTS OF INSECURITY OF PROPERTY.—EXAMPLES FROM VOLNEY'S TRAVELS. —OBJECTIONS RAISED AGAINST CIVILISATION.—STATE OF BOETICA FROM TELEMACHUS.—OBJECTIONS TO COMMUNITY OF GOODS.—ESTABLISHMENT OF JESUITS IN PARAGUAY.—MORAVIANS.—STATE OF SWITZERLAND.—ADVANTAGES RESULTING FROM THE ESTABLISHMENT AND SECURITY OF PROPERTY.

---

MRS. B.

Now that we have traced the rise and progress of civilisation to the security of property, let us see whether the reverse, that is to say, insecurity of property in a civilised country, will not degrade the state of man, and make him retrace his steps till he again degenerates into barbarism.

CAROLINE.

Are there any examples of a civilised people re-

turning to a savage state? I do not recollect ever to have heard of such a change.

MRS. B.

No, because when property has once been instituted, the advantages it produces are such, that it can never be totally abolished; but in countries where the tyranny of government renders it very insecure, the people invariably degenerate, the country falls back into poverty, and a comparative state of barbarism. We have already noticed the miserable change in the once wealthy city of Tyre. Egypt, which was the original seat of the arts and sciences, is now sunk into the most abject degradation; and if you will read the passages I have marked for you in Volney's travels, you will find the truth of this observation very forcibly delineated.

CAROLINE reads.

“ When the tyranny of a government drives the  
“ inhabitants of a village to extremity, the peasants  
“ desert their houses, and withdraw with their fa-  
“ milies into the mountains, or wander in the plains.  
“ It often happens that even individuals turn rob-  
“ bers in order to withdraw themselves from the  
“ tyranny of the laws, and unite into little camps,  
“ which maintain themselves by force of arms;  
“ these increasing become new hordes and new  
“ tribes. We may say, therefore, that in cultivated



“ countries the wandering life originates in the in-  
“ justice or want of policy of the government.”

MRS. B.

This, you see, is very much to the point: but here is another passage equally applicable.

CAROLINE *reads*.

“ The silks of Tripoly are every day losing their  
“ quality from the decay of the mulberry-trees, of  
“ which scarcely any thing now remains but some  
“ hollow trunks. Why not plant new ones? That  
“ is an European observation. Here they never  
“ plant; because were they either to build or plant,  
“ the Pacha would say this man has money, and  
“ it would be extorted from him.”

Besides, where there is so little actual security, what reliance can be placed on futurity? What reason would the proprietors have to hope that the mulberry-trees would ever repay them for the trouble and expense of planting them? Yet I wonder that the government of the country should not, for its own sake, encourage the industry of its subjects.

MRS. B.

In the wretched government of the Turks, every thing is so insecure, from the life and property of the sovereign, to that of the lowest of his subjects, that no one looks to futurity, but every man en-

deavours to grasp at, and enjoy what is immediately within his reach. The following passage will show you what sufferers they all are by such a mistaken system of policy.

CAROLINE (*reading*).

“ In consequence of the wretchedness of the government, the greater part of the pachalics are impoverished and laid waste. In the ancient registers of imports upwards of 3200 villages were reckoned in that of Aleppo, but at present the collector can scarcely find 400. Such of our merchants as have resided there 20 years, have themselves seen the greater part of the environs of Aleppo become depopulated. The traveller meets with nothing but houses in ruins, cisterns rendered useless, and fields abandoned. Those who cultivated them are fled into the towns, where the population is absorbed, but where at least the individual conceals himself among the crowd from the rapacious hands of despotism. In other countries the cities are in some measure the overflow of the population of the country; in Syria they are the effect of its desertion. The roads in the mountains are extremely bad, as the inhabitants are so far from levelling them that they endeavour to render them more rugged, in order, as they say, to cure the Turks of their desire to introduce their cavalry.

“ The Pacha may applaud himself for penetrat-  
 “ ing into the most secret sources of private pro-  
 “ perty, but what are the consequences? The  
 “ people, denied the enjoyment of the fruits of  
 “ their labour, restrain their industry to the supply  
 “ of their necessary wants; the husbandman sows  
 “ only to prevent himself from starving, the arti-  
 “ ficer labours only to maintain his family; if he  
 “ makes any savings he strives to conceal them.  
 “ The people live therefore in poverty and distress,  
 “ but at least they do not enrich their tyrants,  
 “ and the rapacity of despotism is its own punish-  
 “ ment.”

MRS. B.

The degeneracy of the mighty Persian and In-  
 dian monarchies since the conquest of those coun-  
 tries by the Mahometans, is also clearly deducible  
 from the insecurity of property, and affords the most  
 tremendous examples of national decline. Trott,  
 in his History of Hindostan, informs us that dur-  
 ing the disastrous times of the latter monarchs of  
 India, the cruelties and oppressions of the agents  
 of government were such that the farmers burnt  
 their houses, utensils, and crops, and took refuge  
 in the woods and mountains, where those who  
 could neither excite charity nor maintain them-  
 selves by the sword, perished through want.

CAROLINE.

What a melancholy picture this is, my dear

Mrs. B. ! it is, I think, even more painful to contemplate than the wretchedness of savages ; for to their actual misery these people must add the regret of having known better times.

MRS. B.

Dr. Clarke's Travels abound with similar instances of insecurity of property, and legal oppression, which subvert society, and degrade the human species. " In Circassia," he observes, that " the sower scattering seed, or the reaper who gathers the sheaves, are constantly liable to an assault ; and the implements of husbandry are not more essential to the harvest than the carbine, the pistol, and the sabre."

Speaking of the Isle of Cyprus, he says : " The soil every where exhibited a white marly clay, said to be exceedingly rich in its nature, although neglected. The Greeks are so oppressed by their Turkish masters, that they dare not cultivate the land ; the harvest would instantly be taken from them if they did. Their whole aim seems to be, to scrape together barely sufficient, in the course of the whole year, to pay their tax to the governor. The omission of this is punished by torture or by death : and in case of their inability to supply the impost, the inhabitants fly from the island. So many emigrations of this sort happen during the year that

“ the population of Cyprus rarely exceeds 60,000  
“ persons, a number formerly insufficient to have  
“ peopled one of its towns.”

CAROLINE.

You have made me sensible of the advantages of civilisation ; but yet I confess that my mind is not fully satisfied. Is there no medium between a savage life and the extreme inequality of condition which we see in the present state of society? Can we not have conveniences without luxuries ; plenty without superfluity ? I think I have met with an example of such a people, Mrs. B. ; but I dare not venture to mention my authority, as you have once before rejected it.

MRS. B.

If you allude to ~~Telemachus~~, there are many sound doctrines of political economy in that work ; though it must be acknowledged that it is not free from error. But let me hear the sentiments of Fenelon on this subject.

CAROLINE.

Do you remember that delightful picture which he draws of the inhabitants of Boetica? There is an irresistible charm in the description of their happiness ; and if fabulous, it is certainly meant at least to delineate what ought to constitute the hap-

piness of nations; equality, community of goods, but few arts and few wants; an ignorance or contempt of luxury, and manners perfectly conformed to the simplicity of nature. I must read you the passage, and you will tell me whether it is not a satire on political economy:—

“ They live in common without any partition of  
“ lands, the head of every family is its king. They  
“ have no need of judges, for every man submits  
“ to the jurisdiction of conscience. They possess  
“ all things in common; for the cattle produce  
“ milk, and the fields and orchards fruit and grain  
“ of every kind in such abundance, that a people  
“ so frugal and temperate have no need of pro-  
“ perty. They have no fixed place of abode; but  
“ when they have consumed the fruits, and ex-  
“ hausted the pasturage, of one part of the paradise  
“ which they inhabit, they remove their tents to  
“ another: they have, therefore, no opposition of  
“ interest, but are connected by a fraternal affec-  
“ tion which there is nothing to interrupt. This  
“ peace, this union, this liberty, they preserve by  
“ rejecting superfluous wealth, and deceitful plea-  
“ sure: they are all free, they are all equal.

“ Superior wisdom, the result either of long ex-  
“ perience, or uncommon abilities, is the only mark  
“ of distinction among them; the sophistry of fraud,  
“ the cry of violence, the contention of the bar,  
“ and the tumult of battle, are never heard in this

“sacred region, which the gods have taken under  
“their immediate protection; this soil has never  
“been distained with human blood, and even that  
“of a lamb has rarely been shed upon it. When  
“we first traded with these people, we found gold  
“and silver used for ploughshares; and in ge-  
“neral, employed promiscuously with iron. As  
“they carried on no foreign trade, they had no  
“need of money; they were, almost all, either  
“shepherds or husbandmen; for as they suffered  
“no arts to be exercised among them, but such  
“as tended immediately to answer the necessities  
“of life, the number of artificers was consequently  
“small; besides, a greater part, even of those that  
“live by husbandry, or keeping of sheep, are skil-  
“ful in the exercise of such arts, as are necessary  
“to manners so simple and frugal.”

MRS. B.

This, my dear Caroline, is a representation of what the poets call the Golden Age, and requires only truth to make it perfect. If it were an historical account, all the conclusions you deduce from it would be just; but it is fiction, which you must allow makes an essential difference.

Supposing that the earth yielded spontaneously all that is now produced by cultivation; still without the institution of property it could not be enjoyed; the fruit would be gathered before it was

ripe, animals killed before they came to maturity ; for who would protect what was not his own ; or who would economise when all the stores of nature were open to him ? There would be a strange mixture of plenty, waste, and famine.

In this country, for instance, where the only common property consists in hedge-nuts and blackberries, how seldom are they allowed to ripen ? In some parts of Spain, where the beauty of the climate produces a considerable quantity of good wild fruit, it is customary for the priest to bestow a blessing upon it before any is allowed to be gathered, and this ceremony is not performed till the fruit is considered to be generally ripe ; by which means it is prevented from being prematurely gathered. It is with the same view that our game-laws prohibit shooting, till the season when the birds have attained their full growth.

CAROLINE.

But though the Boeticians had all their goods in common, they were not without laws for protecting them.

MRS. B.

If the earth were possessed in common, who would set about cultivating this or that spot of ground ? Government must allot to every man his daily task, and say to the one, You must work in this spot ; to another, You must work in that.



Would these men labour with the same activity and zeal as if they tilled their own ground, or received wages equivalent to their exertions? certainly not. Such a system would transform independent men into slaves, into mere mechanical engines. There would be no inequality of condition, it is true, but the earth would not yield one-tenth part of its actual produce, the population would necessarily be diminished in the same proportion, and if all escaped the distresses of poverty, none would enjoy the acquisition of riches, an enjoyment, which, when derived from the exercise of our talents and our industry, is a just and virtuous feeling; it raises men not only in the scale of wealth, but in that of the power of doing good, of enlarging the sphere of human knowledge, with all the inestimable benefits which result from it.

There have, however, really existed establishments founded on a community of goods. That of the Jesuits in Paraguay was of this description. The influence of religion enabled these priests to exercise a despotic sway over the poor Indians whom they had converted to Christianity; it must be allowed that they tempered their power by a patriarchal care of their docile subjects. Such a species of government might perhaps be well adapted to a tribe of ignorant uncivilised Indians, but it would never make a free, a happy, an independent, and a wealthy people. There is, indeed, still existing

a sect of the same description called Moravians; but it is their religious tenets alone which enable them to keep up such an artificial system of community, and it should be compared rather to a convent of Monks and Nuns, than to a great nation.

I must again repeat it, the industry of man requires the stimulus of exclusive possession and enjoyment; and will always be proportioned to the personal advantage which he derives from it.

CAROLINE.

I find I must give up the point of community of goods; but still I cannot help thinking that the great inequality of conditions which exist in the present state of society is a serious evil.

In Switzerland, where there is much less inequality of fortune than in this country, I have often admired and almost envied the innocent and simple manners of the people. They seem not to know half our wants, nor to suffer half our cares.

MRS. B.

The Swiss are generally governed by mild and equitable laws, which render them a virtuous and a happy people; and if they are not a rich and populous nation, it proceeds not from any want of industry, but from the obstacles opposed both to agriculture and trade by the nature of their country; for they are, on the contrary, uncommonly active

and enterprising. I have often seen men carry on their shoulders baskets of manure up steep ascents inaccessible to beasts of burden, and this for the purpose of cultivating some little insulated spot of ground, which did not appear worth any such labour. The country-women wear their knitting fastened round their waists, in order to have it at hand to fill up every little interval that occurs in their domestic employments. If a Swiss woman goes to fetch water from the fountain, or faggots from the wood, her burden is skilfully poised on her head, whilst her fingers busily ply the needles. But industrious as they are, the resources of the country are too limited to enable a father of a family to provide for all his children; some of them are therefore obliged to emigrate, and seek their fortune in a foreign land, which offers greater resources to their industry. Hence the number of Swiss merchants, governesses, shopkeepers, and servants, that are to be met with in almost all countries: would not these people be happier if they found means of exercising their industry and their talents in a country to which they are all so much attached, and which they have so much reason to love. In the energy of youthful vigour men may often quit their own country, and live happily in a foreign land; but enquire of the parents who are on the point of separating from their children as soon as they have attained the hopeful age of

manhood, whether their country would be less happy for offering them the means of employment and maintenance at home.

The Swiss cannot afford to support a standing army for the defence of their territory; they are therefore under the necessity of engaging their troops in the service of foreign potentates, in order to provide for a part of their population, and to have a resource by calling them home in times of danger. Would not these soldiers be happier in defending their own country, than in shedding their blood as mercenaries in the cause of foreigners? We have a remarkable proof of it, in the effect which their patriotic songs are said to produce on them; when these simple airs recall to their minds their beloved and regretted country, it either drives them to desertion, or renders their lives miserable; and so deep is the impression made by these national airs, that it was found necessary to forbid their being sung by the troops in foreign service.

CAROLINE.

There is no withstanding your attacks, Mrs B. You drive me from all my strong holds. I expected to have found a safe asylum in the mountains of Switzerland, but I see that I must once more take refuge in London, where I am sure you will admit that the contrast between the luxuries of

the rich and the wretchedness of the poor is shocking to every person of common feeling.

MRS. B.

If the wretchedness of the poor were the effect of the luxuries of the rich, I should certainly agree with you on that point; but I believe it to be otherwise. However, as the people, whose progress towards wealth and civilisation we have been tracing in our two last conversations, are yet far from being sufficiently advanced in their career to be guilty of any great excess in luxury, we must patiently follow them in their advancement in knowledge and the acquisition of wealth before we treat of the subject of luxury.

## CONVERSATION V.

---

### ON THE DIVISION OF LABOUR.

ORIGIN OF BARTER. — DIVISION OF LABOUR. —  
EXTRACTS FROM SMITH'S WEALTH OF NATIONS  
ON THE DIVISION OF LABOUR. — ADVANTAGES OF  
MACHINERY. — EFFECTS OF THE DIVISION OF  
LABOUR ON THE MORALS AND INTELLECTS OF  
THE PEOPLE. — RECAPITULATION.

---

MRS. B.

**W**E have ascertained that the establishment and security of property were the chief causes of the emancipation of mankind from the shackles of sloth and ignorance; but there are other subordinate causes which tend greatly to promote the progress of industry and civilisation. The first of these is the introduction of *exchange* or *barter*.

We observed that when men found they could place a reliance on the security of their possessions,

they laboured with redoubled activity, and far from being satisfied with a scanty and temporary maintenance, they provide for the future, they accumulate a little store not only of the necessaries, but of the comforts and conveniencies of life. The one has a stock of arrows for the chase, another of provisions for the winter, a third of clothes or ornaments for his person. They will remain in undisturbed possession of this little property; but those who can no longer obtain it by force or fraud will endeavour to procure it by other means. In the hunting season they will apply to the fabricator of arrows; but they will not go to him with empty hands; they must be provided with something to offer in exchange for the arrows, something which they think will tempt him to part with them: whilst those who have nothing to give in return will wish in vain to obtain them.

Here then is a new incitement to a spirit of industry. Whoever has accumulated more than he wants of any commodity, may find means of exchanging the surplus for something that will gratify other desires. As objects of desire increase, the wish to possess and the effort to obtain them increase also; and the industry of man is exerted either in producing them himself, or in producing something by means of which he may obtain them. Thus the torpid apathy and languid indolence of a savage

yields to the curiosity, the admiration, the desire, the activity, and industry of a civilised being.

The man, for instance, who first cultivates a little spot of ground, may be said to produce in time a general harvest; not only by introducing the art of tillage, but by the powerful impulse which it gives to industry in general. He cannot himself consume the whole produce of his little garden, but he exchanges the surplus for other things of which he stands in need.

CAROLINE.

Besides, he would not have had sufficient time to bestow on the cultivation of his garden, if he had been, at the same time, obliged to provide for all his other wants.

MRS. B.

Very true; those therefore who mean to partake of the fruits of his garden must contribute towards the supply of those other wants; some will bring him fish from the river, others game from the woods; when his immediate necessities are supplied he will be induced to exchange his vegetables for articles of conveniency, such as baskets to contain his fruit, or some of the rude implements of husbandry; or he may finally be tempted to part with some for mere luxuries, such as rare shells, feathers, and other personal ornaments. His neighbours



will therefore be eager to produce or procure articles, which, either from necessity, conveniency, or merely from pleasure, will induce the gardener to part with the produce of his garden; for this purpose invention will be stimulated, new commodities will be fabricated, skill will be acquired, and a general spirit of industry developed.

CAROLINE.

So far the introduction of barter seems to answer a very useful purpose; but when once industry is roused, why should not every one exert his abilities to supply his own wants, and gratify his desires, without the intervention of barter? If a man happens to be possessed of a superfluous quantity of any commodity, it is no doubt desirable to exchange it for something more wanted: but it seems to me to be an unnatural and circuitous mode of proceeding, to produce something which we do not want, in order afterwards to exchange it for something which we do want.

MRS. B.

Would you then have the baker kill his own meat as well as bake his own bread, brew his own beer, build his own house, and make his own clothes, instead of procuring these various articles in exchange through the sale of his bread?

CAROLINE.

Oh no, it would be impossible to undertake so many occupations; and then he can do one thing better than he can do many : but this separation of trades and employments cannot take place in a savage state.

MRS. B.

No, but it begins to operate as soon as barter is introduced; and it is to this circuitous mode that we owe all our improvements in skill and dexterity; the advantages of which are much more important than you imagine.

When barter became common, it was soon discovered that the more a man confined himself to any one single branch of industry, to the fabrication of bows and arrows for instance, the greater the skill and dexterity he acquired in that particular art; so that he could make bows and arrows not only quicker, but of better workmanship than another man who followed a variety of pursuits.

CAROLINE.

Now I begin to understand the advantage that results from barter, independently of its inspiring a spirit of industry and a taste for a variety of enjoyments. The artist who has acquired a superior degree of excellence in the fabrication of bows and arrows, would gain more, by confining himself entirely to that occupation, and exchanging his

merchandise for whatever else he was desirous of obtaining, than by turning his attention to a variety of pursuits.

MRS. B.

No doubt he would, provided he were sure of being able to dispose of all the bows and arrows he could make: for it would be useless to fabricate more than he could sell or exchange; and as no one could become a purchaser unless he had something to offer in return, a long period of time must elapse before the progress of industry would create a sufficient number of purchasers to enable an individual to earn a livelihood by the fabrication of bows and arrows.

It is therefore only in a more advanced stage of society that the demand for commodities is so great that men find it advantageous to devote themselves wholly to one particular art.

Adam Smith observes, that “in lone houses and  
“very small villages which are scattered about in  
“so desert a country as the Highlands of Scotland,  
“every farmer must be butcher, baker, and brewer  
“for his own family. In such situations we can  
“scarcely expect to find even a smith, a carpenter,  
“or a mason within less than twenty miles of an-  
“other of the same trade. The scattered families  
“that live at eight or ten miles distant from the  
“nearest of them, must learn to perform for them-  
“selves a great number of little pieces of work, for

“ which, in more populous countries, they call in  
“ the assistance of these workmen.”

This separation of employments, which, in political economy, is called the *division of labour*, can take place only in civilised countries. In the flourishing states of Europe we find men not only exclusively engaged in the exercises of one particular art, but that art subdivided into numerous branches, each of which forms a distinct occupation for different workmen.

Here is a beautiful passage in Adam Smith, the merits of which you will now be able to appreciate.

“ Observe the accommodation of the most common artificer or day-labourer in a civilised and thriving country, and you will perceive that the number of people of whose industry a part, though but a small part, has been employed in procuring him this accommodation, exceeds all computation. The woollen coat, for example, which covers the day-labourer, coarse and rough as it may appear, is the produce of the joint labour of a great multitude of workmen. The shepherd, the sorter of the wool, the wool-comber or carder, the dyer, the scribbler, the spinner, the weaver, the fuller, the dresser, with many others, must all join their different arts in order to complete even this homely production. How many merchants and carriers, besides, must have been employed in transporting the materials

“ from some of those workmen to others who often  
“ live in a very distant part of the country ! How  
“ much commerce and navigation in particular,  
“ how many ship-builders, sailors, sail-makers,  
“ rope-makers, must have been employed in order  
“ to bring together the different drugs made use  
“ of by the dyer, which often come from the re-  
“ motest corners of the world ! What a variety of  
“ labour too is necessary in order to produce the  
“ tools of the meanest of those workmen ! To say  
“ nothing of such complicated machines as the ship  
“ of the sailor, the mill of the fuller, or even the  
“ loom of the weaver, let us consider only what a  
“ variety of labour is requisite in order to form that  
“ very simple machine, the shears with which the  
“ shepherd clips the wool. The miner, the builder  
“ of the furnace for heating the ore, the seller of  
“ the timber, the burner of the charcoal to be made  
“ use of in the smelting-house, the brickmaker, the  
“ bricklayer, the workmen who attend the furnace,  
“ the mill-wright, the forger, the smith, must all of  
“ them join their different arts in order to produce  
“ them. Were we to examine, in the same man-  
“ ner, all the different parts of his dress and house-  
“ hold furniture, the coarse linen shirt which he  
“ wears next his skin, the shoes which cover his  
“ feet, the bed which he lies on, and all the differ-  
“ ent parts which compose it, the kitchen-grate at  
“ which he prepares his victuals, the coals which

“ he makes use of for that purpose, dug from the  
“ bowels of the earth, and brought to him by a long  
“ sea and a long land carriage, all the other uten-  
“ sils of his kitchen, all the furniture of his table,  
“ the knives and forks, the earthen or pewter plates  
“ upon which he serves up and divides his victuals,  
“ the different hands employed in preparing his  
“ bread and his beer, the glass window which lets  
“ in the heat and the light, and keeps out the wind  
“ and rain, with all the knowledge and art requisite  
“ for preparing that beautiful and happy invention,  
“ without which these northern parts of the world  
“ could scarce have afforded a very comfortable  
“ habitation, together with the tools of all the dif-  
“ ferent workmen employed in producing those  
“ different conveniences; if we examine, I say, all  
“ these things, and consider what a variety of la-  
“ bour is employed about each of them, we shall  
“ be sensible that without the assistance and co-  
“ operation of many thousands, the very meanest  
“ person in a civilised country could not be pro-  
“ vided, even according to what we very falsely  
“ imagine the easy and simple manner in which he  
“ is commonly accommodated. Compared, indeed,  
“ with the more extravagant luxury of the great,  
“ his accommodation must no doubt appear ex-  
“ tremely simple and easy; and yet it may be true,  
“ perhaps, that the accommodation of an European  
“ prince does not always so much exceed that of an

“industrious and frugal peasant, as the accommodation of the latter exceeds that of many an African king, the absolute master of the lives and liberties of ten thousand naked savages.”

CAROLINE.

It is very true, certainly; and it reminds me of an observation of Dr. Johnson in the Rambler, “That not a washerwoman sits down to breakfast without tea from the East Indies, and sugar from the West.”

I now comprehend your reference to the little story of the cherry-orchard: it was by dividing amongst the children the different parts of the process of plaiting straw, that they succeeded so much better than the boy who was left to perform the whole of his plait alone.

MRS. B.

I will now point out to you some examples remarked by Adam Smith in illustration of the benefits derived from the division of labour. That of the pin-manufactory I shall give you in his own words. He observes, that “A workman not educated to this business, nor acquainted with the use of the machinery employed in it, could scarce, perhaps, with his utmost industry, make one pin in a day, and certainly could not make twenty. But in the way in which this business

“ is now carried on, not only the whole work is a  
“ peculiar trade, but it is divided into a number of  
“ branches, of which the greater part are likewise  
“ peculiar trades. One man draws out the wire,  
“ another straightens it, a third cuts it, a fourth  
“ points it, a fifth grinds it at the top for receiving  
“ the head. To make the head requires two or  
“ three distinct operations; to put it on is a peculiar  
“ business, to whiten the pins is another; it is even  
“ a trade by itself to put them into the paper;  
“ and the important business of making a pin is,  
“ in this manner, divided into about eighteen dis-  
“ tinct operations, which, in some manufactories, are  
“ all performed by distinct hands, though in others  
“ the same man will sometimes perform two or  
“ three of them. I have seen a small manufactory  
“ of this kind where ten men only were em-  
“ ployed, and where some of them consequently  
“ performed two or three distinct operations: but  
“ though they were very poor, and therefore but  
“ indifferently accommodated with the necessary  
“ machinery, they could, when they exerted them-  
“ selves, make among them about twelve pounds of  
“ pins in a day. There are in a pound upwards of  
“ four thousand pins of a middling size. Those ten  
“ persons, therefore, could make among them up-  
“ wards of forty-eight thousand pins in a day. Each  
“ person, therefore, making a tenth part of forty-



“ eight thousand pins, might be considered as  
“ making four thousand eight hundred pins in a day.  
“ But if they had all wrought separately and inde-  
“ pendently, and without any of them having been  
“ educated to this peculiar business, they certainly  
“ could not each of them have made twenty, per-  
“ haps not one pin in a day; that is, certainly,  
“ not the two hundred and fortieth, perhaps not  
“ the four thousand eight hundredth part of what  
“ they are at present capable of performing, in con-  
“ sequence of a proper division and combination  
“ of their different operations.”

CAROLINE.

These effects of the division of labour are really wonderful !

MRS. B.

The instance which Adam Smith quotes in proof of the dexterity acquired by men, whose labour is reduced to one simple operation, is also very remarkable. After observing that a man unaccustomed to a blacksmith's forge can with difficulty make three hundred nails in a day, he says that a common blacksmith can forge one thousand; but that he has seen boys who have been brought up to the art of nail-making exclusively, acquire such a degree of dexterity as to complete two thousand three hundred in a day.

## CAROLINE.

The difference is prodigious: but I can conceive it when I observe with what awkwardness a man handles the tools of an art with which he is unacquainted, whilst they are used with ease and dexterity by those who are accustomed to them.

## MRS. B.

Then we must consider that when a man's whole attention and talents are turned to one particular object, there is a much greater probability of his discovering means of improving his workmanship, or facilitating and abridging his labour, than if his mind were engaged in a variety of pursuits. It is most frequently to workmen, that we are indebted for improvements in the process and instruments of labour.

Another advantage derived from the division of labour is the regular and uninterrupted manner in which it enables the work to proceed. A labourer who has many diversified occupations not only loses time in going from one to another, but also in settling himself to his different employments; and, to use a common expression, as soon as his *hand is in*, he must quit his work to take up another totally different. Thus he must go from his plough to his loom, from his loom to his forge, from his forge to his mill, — but no — there could be neither plough, nor loom, nor forge, nor mill,

before a division of labour had taken place; for no man could either find time or acquire skill to construct such machines, unless they could bestow the whole of their labour and attention upon them.

The construction of machines, therefore, we may consider as a refined branch of the division of labour. Their effect in facilitating and abridging labour is almost incredible. How easy, for instance, the operation of grinding corn is rendered by so simple a machine as a wind-mill, or a water-mill! Were this to be done by manual labour, by bruising it between stones, it would be almost an endless task; the hand-mill, which is still in general use in India and many other countries, requires both time and labour; whilst in the wind-mill, or the water-mill, the natural motion of the air, or water, performs nearly the whole of the work.

CAROLINE.

But the cotton-mills we have lately seen are a much more wonderful example of the effect of machinery. In these a steam-engine sets all the wheels, and spindles in motion, and performs the work of hundreds of people.

MRS. B.

The great efficacy of machinery in the hands of man depends upon the art of compelling natural agents, such as wind, steam, and water, to perform the task which he would otherwise be obliged

to execute himself; by which means labour is very much abridged, a great deal of human effort is saved, and the work is often accomplished in a more uniform and accurate manner.

We noticed the skill that could be acquired in the art of forging nails: but the utmost efforts of manual labour fall far short of machinery. A machine has been invented in the United States of America for the purpose of cutting nails out of iron, the operation of which is so rapid that it forms 250 perfect nails in the space of one minute, or 15,000 in an hour.

CAROLINE.

The metals, I suppose, could not have been brought into use, till a considerable progress had been made in the division of labour?

MRS. B.

Certainly not; for it requires the exclusive labour of a great number of men to work a mine. The Mexicans and Peruvians in America, though they had made some progress towards civilisation, had never sought for gold in the bowels of the earth, but contented themselves with what they could pick up in the beds of rivers. In Britain, the Cornish mines were worked in very ancient times; and it is even supposed that the Phoenicians had introduced this art among the ancient Britons,

with whom they are said to have trafficked for tin and other metals.

CAROLINE.

I am perfectly satisfied that the division of labour is a necessary step towards the accumulation of national wealth: but may it not have an injurious effect on the mental faculties of individuals? A man who is confined to one simple mechanical operation, however great the facility and perfection he may acquire in the performance of it, is shut out from all other improvement; his mind will never be roused to exertion by difficulty, interested by variety, or enlightened by comparison. His ideas will be confined within the narrow limits of his monotonous employment, and his rational powers will become so degraded as to render him scarcely superior to the machinery at which he works. Whilst a common husbandman, whose occupations are diversified, and but little aided by machinery, acquires knowledge by experience in his various employments, and, having a much wider range of observation, enjoys a corresponding development of intellect.

MRS. B.

The knowledge of a ploughman is often remarkably distinct in his limited sphere: but yet I have usually found that in conversing upon general

topics with a ploughman and with a mechanic, the latter has discovered more intelligence, and that his mind has appeared more active and accustomed to reflection. I conceive this to be owing to the facility which the arts afford of bringing men together in society. They are carried on in towns, where neighbourhood renders social intercourse much more easy than in scattered hamlets in the country. When they meet together they talk over each other's concerns, read the newspapers, and discuss the politics of the parish, or of the state. This observation is particularly applicable to manufactories, where a number of persons generally work together in the same room, and their employment seldom prevents conversation. Social intercourse, in whatever class of the community it takes place, cannot fail to promote the diffusion of knowledge; the lower orders of people become acquainted with the comforts and conveniences which have been acquired by the more skilful and industrious; they learn to appreciate the value, and are stimulated to acquire the means of obtaining them; a mode of instruction which we have observed to be the most essential step towards dispelling ignorance, and exciting industry.

CAROLINE.

But is there not some danger that the advantages obtained in the improvement of the mind by

this state of constant intercourse amongst the lower classes in manufacturing towns, will be more than counterbalanced by the corruption of morals? How much more vice appears to prevail amongst the poor in crowded cities, than in the cottages of the peasantry!

MRS. B.

You should consider the difference of the population; there are often a greater number of people collected together in a manufacturing town than there are scattered over a space of thirty square miles of country: were their morals, therefore, the same, vice would appear much more conspicuous in the town than in the country. Admitting, however, the comparative amount of crimes to be greater in the former, I believe that it is compensated by a more considerable proportion of virtue: whilst innocence is probably more prevalent in the country.

CAROLINE.

Yet you must allow that we hear much more of the vices than of the virtues of manufacturing towns and great cities.

MRS. B.

Because crimes, from being amenable to the laws, are necessarily made known, whilst virtue seldom receives any public testimony of approbation. Every act of fraud or violence is sounded in our ears,

whilst the humanity, the sympathy for sufferings, the sacrifices which the poor make to relieve each other's distresses, are known only to those who enter into their domestic concerns. This has been frequently noticed by medical men who have attended the lower classes of people in sickness at their own houses.

CAROLINE.

Yet, upon the whole, do you not think that the situation of the poor in the country is better than it is in towns?

MRS. B.

They have each their advantages and disadvantages, and I should imagine that good and evil are pretty equally balanced between them. If the inhabitants of towns are better informed, and can more easily acquire some of the comforts of life, the inhabitants of the country are more vigorous and healthy, more cleanly, and they have the advantage of a more constant and regular demand for the produce of their labour, which is not so liable to be affected by the casualties of war, fashion, and other causes, which often occasion great distress to manufacturers.

But should you still entertain any apprehension that the division of labour may check and repress the intellectual improvement of the lower classes, I should consider this as amply compensated by



its prodigious effect in the multiplication of wealth, a circumstance which not only increases the comforts of the poor, but by facilitating the means of acquiring knowledge, ultimately promotes its diffusion among all classes of men. It is to the division of labour that we are indebted for improvements in the processes of art, and amongst others for the invention of printing, which has proved such wonderful means of extending knowledge of every description.

We have now, I think, brought our savages to a considerable degree of advancement in civilisation; I would wish you briefly to recapitulate the causes which have produced this happy change, and at our next interview we will continue to trace their progress.

CAROLINE.

Labour seems to be the natural and immediate cause of wealth: but it will produce little more than the necessaries of life until its benefits are extended by the establishment of such a government as can give security to property. The spirit of industry will then be rapidly developed. The surplus produce of one individual will be exchanged for that of another. The facilities thus offered to barter will naturally introduce the division of labour or of employment; and will soon give rise to the invention of machinery, the merits of which we have just discussed.

MRS. B.

Extremely well, Caroline. We shall now take leave of this improved state of society for the present, with a conviction, I hope, that we leave mankind much happier than we found it.

## CONVERSATION VI.

---

### ON CAPITAL.

**DISTINCTION OF RICH AND POOR. — ACCUMULATION OF WEALTH. — HOW IT IS DISPOSED OF. — THE POOR LABOUR FOR IT. — CONTRACT BETWEEN THE CAPITALIST AND THE LABOURER. — THE RICH UNDER THE NECESSITY OF EMPLOYING THE POOR. — DEFINITION OF CAPITAL. — HOW CAPITAL YIELDS AN INCOME. — PROFITS MADE BY THE EMPLOYMENT OF LABOURERS. — PRODUCTIVE LABOURERS. — INDEPENDENCE OF MEN OF CAPITAL. — INDUSTRY LIMITED BY EXTENT OF CAPITAL. — INDUSTRY INCREASES IN PROPORTION TO CAPITAL. — CAPITAL AUGMENTED BY THE ADDITION OF SAVINGS FROM INCOME. — HAPPINESS RESULTING RATHER FROM THE GRADUAL ACQUISITION, THAN THE ACTUAL POSSESSION OF WEALTH.**

---

**MRS. B.**

**In tracing the progress of society towards civilisation, we noticed the happy effects resulting from the security of property and the division of labour.**

From this period we may also date the diversity of ranks, and the general distinction between rich and poor. \*

CAROLINE.

And all the evils that arise from inequality of condition. This, alas! is the dark side of the picture.

MRS. B.

So far from viewing the diversity of rank and condition as an evil, I consider it as productive of much general benefit, as it is that state of society best calculated to stimulate the industry, and bring into action the various faculties of mankind. (If it does not exist in a savage state, it is because indigence is universal; for no one being able to acquire more than what is necessary for his immediate maintenance, every one is poor. When civilisation takes place, the advantages arising from the security of property and the division of labour enable an industrious and skilful man to acquire more wealth than will suffice to gratify his wants or desires. By continued exertion, this surplus produce of his industry in the course of time accumulates, and he becomes rich; whilst the less industrious, who acquires merely a daily subsistence, remains poor or accumulates nothing, and the idle are reduced to positive indigence.

CAROLINE.

I cannot perceive what advantage arises from the

*Handwritten notes:*  
 1. 2  
 2. 1  
 3. 1  
 4. 1  
 5. 1

*Handwritten note:*  
 1. 1

accumulation of wealth, for it must either be spent or hoarded; if spent, the hard-working man is eventually no richer than his less industrious neighbours; and if hoarded, the accumulation is of no use to any one.

MRS. B.

Your dilemma is put with some ingenuity, but you must at least allow that, where more is spent, there is a greater scope for enjoyment; and in regard to hoarding, I hope you are not recurring to your notions about riches and money, and forget that the wealth of which we have been speaking consists of exchangeable commodities, either agricultural or manufactured, many of which are not of a nature to be kept, were men inclined to hoard them. A much better mode of disposing of them has been devised; one which not only secures, but augments them.

CAROLINE.

What can that be?

MRS. B.

This you will hardly understand without some previous explanation.

- In civilised society men cannot, as in a state of nature, obtain a subsistence by hunting, or from the spontaneous produce of the earth; because the wilderness has been destroyed by cultivation, and the land has become private property.

*Original MS. in the  
possession of the  
British Museum*

CAROLINE.

And when the land is occupied by the rich, there seems to be no resource left for the poor?

MRS. B.

What do you suppose the rich do with their wealth?

CAROLINE.

The poor, I am sure, partake but little of it, for the sums the most charitable give away are but trifling compared to what they spend upon themselves.

MRS. B.

I am far from wishing that the poor should be dependent on the charity of the rich for a subsistence. Is there no other mode of partaking of their wealth but as beggars?

CAROLINE.

Not that I know of, unless by stealth. Oh no, I guess now — you mean they may earn it by their labour?

MRS. B.

Certainly. The poor man may be supposed to say to the rich one, "You have more than you want, whilst I am destitute. Give me some little share of your wealth for a subsistence; I have nothing to offer in exchange but my labour; but with that I will undertake to procure you more than

you part with — if you will maintain me, I will work for you.”

CAROLINE.

But is it not usual to pay wages to labourers instead of maintaining them?

MRS. B.

It is in effect the same; for the wages purchase a maintenance; the money merely represents the things of which the labourer stands in need, and for which he may exchange it.

CAROLINE.

The labourer may then be supposed to say to the rich man, “Give me food and clothing, and I by my labour will produce for you other things in return.”

MRS. B.

Precisely; the rich man exchanges with the labourer the produce or work that is already done, for work that is yet to be done. It is thus that he acquires a command over the labour of the poor, and increases his wealth by the profits he derives from it.

CAROLINE.

This is a resource for the poor, I own; but not enough to satisfy me entirely, for they are left at the mercy of the rich, and if these did not choose to employ them, they would starve.

with  
capital  
rich  
labourer

binds  
one  
to  
another

have  
a  
work  
man  
rich

MRS. B.

True; but what could the rich do without their assistance?

CAROLINE.

Their wealth would furnish them a plentiful subsistence.

MRS. B.

At first it might, but in time it would be consumed. Their harvests and their cattle would be eaten, their clothes worn out, and their houses fallen into decay.

CAROLINE.

But you know that the harvests are annually re-produced, new clothes are purchased, and houses repaired or rebuilt: riches easily obtain all these things.

MRS. B.

And who is it that re-produces the harvests? Who manufactures new clothes, and builds new houses, but the poorer classes of men?

CAROLINE.

That is very true; I was indeed aware that it was necessary to employ labourers for this purpose; but I did not consider that it created reciprocity of benefit, by rendering the poor in a great measure independent of the will of the rich.

*Rich - employed  
poor - labour*



MRS. B.

The rich and poor are necessary to each other; it is precisely the fable of the belly and the limbs; without the rich the poor would starve; without the poor the rich would be compelled to labour for their own subsistence.

CAROLINE.

And this, I suppose, is what you alluded to, when you said that the rich had a means of securing their wealth without hoarding it.

MRS. B.

Yes; the labouring classes consume and re-produce it. Wealth, thus destined for re-production by the employment of labourers, is called *capital*. You have heard of capital before, no doubt?

CAROLINE.

Oh yes; a man of fortune is said to be a man of capital: I always considered these as synonymous terms.

MRS. B.

So they are; and you may have heard also that to spend a capital is very ruinous; that it should be placed in some profitable line, so as to yield an income; that is to say, it must be employed to set

labourers to work, and the profit derived from their labour is called revenue or income.

CAROLINE.

If capital is employed in paying the wages of labourers, it is spent and consumed by them, and is lost to the capitalist as much as if he spent it.

MRS. B.

No ; capital employed is consumed, but not destroyed : it is at least no more destroyed than the seed sown in the ground, which is re-produced with increase. Thus the capital consumed by labourers is re-produced with increased value in the articles of their workmanship. If the labourer raise corn for twenty loaves of bread whilst his wages are equivalent to the value of ten, if he manufactures cloth for two coats whilst his wages are equal to the price of one, the second coat and the second loaf of bread will be the profit, and constitute part of the income of his employer. It is thus that the employment of capital produces an income.

CAROLINE.

Yet I have some scruple as to the mode of obtaining this income. If the labourer can by his industry produce more than the value of his wages, it seems but fair that he should keep the whole of his earnings ; it is surely a great discouragement

to his industry to be obliged to yield part of them to his employer?

MRS. B.

If the labourer re-produce for the capitalist commodities equal in value to his wages, the *income* is only equivalent to the *out-going*; he restores therefore exactly what the capitalist has advanced him, the latter being neither a loser nor a gainer by the bargain; any further, at least, than that, by reproduction, perishable produce is made to last. Now it is evident that no capitalist would consent to such an agreement. When therefore the poor man applies to the rich one for a maintenance, offering his labour in return, he does not say — for the food you give me during the present year, I will produce an equal quantity of food next year — because he knows that he would not be employed on such terms; he must, by the prospect of some advantage, induce the capitalist to exchange food that is already produced for something that is yet to be produced. He therefore says — for the food you give me now, I will raise you a greater or more valuable supply next year.

CAROLINE.

It appears to me a hardship, notwithstanding, that after the rich have engrossed the whole property of the land, nothing should be left to the poor

beyond their own labour, and that they should not be allowed to reap the whole of the advantages it affords. If I were a legislator, I should be disposed to establish a law compelling the capitalist to allow the labourer the whole of the profit arising from his work. Such a regulation would surely tend to improve the condition of the poor. You smile, Mrs. B., I am afraid that you do not approve of my plan.

MRS. B.

I would suggest an addition to it, which is, a law to compel the capitalist to employ the labourers; for on your terms none would give them work. The farmer, were he obliged to pay the husbandmen the value of the crop they raised, would derive no profit from their sale; he would, therefore, leave his fields uncultivated, the land would lie waste, and the husbandmen starve. Manufacturers for the same reason would discharge their workmen, merchants their clerks; in a word, industry would be paralysed; and were you to devise a system of certain and inevitable ruin to a country, I do not think you could adopt a more efficacious mode of promoting your design.

CAROLINE.

So much for the wisdom of my laws! I certainly ought to have foreseen these consequences, since, as you observed before, the inducement for

the rich to employ the poor is the advantage the former derive from it.

MRS. B.

Undoubtedly. The profits the rich derive from the employment of their capital constitutes their income; without such income the capital, it is true, might, by your compulsory laws, be reproduced annually; but yielding no income, the capitalist would gradually consume it in the maintenance of his family; he would every year become poorer, and his means of employing labourers would annually diminish.

CAROLINE.

This is an idea which often perplexed me when I was a child. I thought that in proportion as my father spent his money he must be impoverished; but now I understand that wealth is reproduced and augmented by the labour of the poor.

MRS. B.

And observe, that an income can be obtained by no other means than the employment of the poor.

So far from considering the profits which the capitalist derives from his labourers as an evil, I have always thought it one of the most beneficent ordinations of Providence, that the employment of the poor should be a necessary step to the increase of the wealth of the rich.

Thus the rich man has the means of augmenting

his capital, not by hoarding, but by distributing it among his labourers, who consume it, and reproduce another and a larger capital — hence have they obtained the name of *productive labourers*.

CAROLINE.

When a man, therefore, becomes possessed of a capital, whether by accumulation of his savings or by inheritance, it is no longer requisite for him to work for a maintenance, as others will labour for him?

MRS. B.

It depends on the amount of his capital, and the extent of his desires. If it will yield an income sufficient to maintain him and his family with the degree of comfort or affluence which satisfies his ambition, he may live in idleness; if not, he will work himself; or at least superintend his labourers. This is the case with the farmer, the merchant, the master-manufacturer, each of whom superintends his respective concerns.

Do you understand now, that no productive enterprise can be undertaken without capital? Capital is necessary to pay labourers, to purchase materials to work upon, instruments to work with; in short, to defray the whole expense attached to the employment of labourers.

CAROLINE.

But a man may undertake a productive enter-

prise without employing labourers : for instance, if he gathers mushrooms on a common, he requires no capital for that purpose ; no tools are used, the earth produces mushrooms spontaneously, and every one has a right to gather them. The same may be said of nuts and wild strawberries.

MRS. B.

These are small remnants of the resources of a savage state, in which subsistence is derived from the spontaneous produce of the earth : but the employments which require no capital are very inconsiderable, and occur only during a short season of the year.

CAROLINE.

There is one, which appears to me of great importance — fishing. Fishermen are in no want of capital ; the fish costs them merely the trouble of catching. Oh no ! I am mistaken ; I forgot the nets and the boats that are necessary for fishing ; besides, the men must have something to subsist on, when the weather will not allow them to venture on the water.

But there is another case, Mrs. B. ; I have known persons who were worth nothing, and yet who set up in business on credit.

MRS. B.

That is no exception ; for credit is the employment of the capital belonging to another.

CAROLINE.

Well, it is a melancholy reflection that one must always possess something in order to gain more. He then who has nothing to begin with, has no means of escaping from poverty.

MRS. B.

Poverty is a word of vague signification. If you mean to express by it a state of positive indigence, the labourer who earns a subsistence from day to day cannot come under that description. But if you use the word poverty in opposition to wealth, that is to say, to the possession of capital, labourers, though usually in that state, are not necessarily condemned to it. A healthy and hard-working man, may, if he be economical, almost always lay aside something as the beginning of a little capital, which by additional savings accumulates.

CAROLINE.

That is true. Thomas, our under-gardener, who is a very intelligent, industrious man, was saying the other day to one of his fellow-labourers, that as soon as he had laid by a little money to begin the world with, he intended to marry. But it seems to me that if my father would give him a cottage, and an acre or two of ground, he might raise vegetables for market, and by these means support himself and his family.



MRS. B.

In that case your father would supply the capital. The cottage and the land is a capital, but they will not do alone. Thomas would besides require garden tools to work with, and an assistant, if not several, to prepare the ground. Then he must not only subsist himself, but maintain his family till the produce of his garden can be brought to market. In the course of three or four years, from the earnings of daily labour he may have amassed a little capital sufficient to enable him to undertake this; he will then no longer be a labourer for hire, but will work on his own account. It is thus every thing has a beginning; the largest fortunes have often had no greater origin.

Now, supposing Thomas to be able to rent an acre of land when he is worth 100*l.*, he may rent ten acres when he is worth 1000*l.*, but he cannot rent more; he cannot increase his farm, beyond his means of paying for it; his industry, therefore, is limited by the extent of his capital.

CAROLINE.

*But I do not quite understand that.*

MRS. B.

Let us imagine a tradesman, a shoemaker for instance, to be master of a capital which will enable him to maintain ten workmen, and that the

following year he finds that he has gained 100% by the profits derived from their labour. This 100% constitutes his income; if he spend it, his capital remains what it was before: but if he adds it to his capital it will enable him to maintain and provide work for a greater number of journeymen. Let us say that he can now employ twelve instead of ten men; these will make him a greater quantity of shoes, and the additional profits arising from their sale, will, if added to his capital, still further increase his means of employing workmen. Thus the demand for labour, or, in other words, employment for the poor, will ever increase with the increase of capital, and be limited only by its deficiency.

*rich grows  
richer &  
more are  
maintained*

CAROLINE.

But we must not forget that the master shoemaker and his family are to be maintained out of these profits; the whole of them cannot, therefore, be added to his capital.

MRS. B.

Certainly not. The expenses of his family consume, in general, by far the greater part of a man's income; but, if he is prudent, he will lay aside as much as can be spared, and these savings will enable him to enlarge and improve his business, of whatever description it may be.

P 4

*Give me  
the book*

CAROLINE.

Thus a farmer would be able to extend and improve the cultivation of his farm by increasing the number of his labourers — and a merchant proportionally to extend his commercial dealings — so that the richer a man becomes, the more it will be in his power to increase his wealth?

MRS. B.

Yes; the second thousand pounds is often acquired with less difficulty than the first hundred.

CAROLINE.

That is hard upon those who have nothing. The rich have too many advantages over the poor.

MRS. B.

The man who accumulates a large fortune by his industry injures no one; on the contrary, he confers a benefit on the community. You will understand this better by-and-by. In the mean time I must observe to you, that happiness, so far as it is dependent on wealth, consists less in the possession of riches than in the pleasure of acquiring them. Every degree of increasing prosperity is attended with its enjoyment. Your gardener, who saves his earnings with the prospect of settling at the end of two or three years, has probably more satisfaction in the anticipation of his future wealth than he will have in the possession of it; as long as he continues making annual additions to his

capital, the same source of enjoyment will be preserved, but will never excite so strong an interest as at first. Merchants will tell you that their first gains gave them greater pleasure than all their subsequent accumulations. Nature has wisely attached happiness to the gradual acquisition, rather than to the actual possession of wealth, thus rendering it an incitement to industry; and we shall hereafter see that this progressive state of prosperity is most conducive also to the happiness of nations.

*all even progress  
becomes incitement  
industry*

## CONVERSATION VII.

---

### ON CAPITAL — *continued.*

OF FIXED CAPITAL. — DISTINCTION BETWEEN FIXED AND CIRCULATING CAPITAL. — EXAMPLES OF THE DIFFERENT KINDS OF CAPITAL. — OF SLAVES. — FIXED CAPITAL AND CIRCULATING CAPITAL EQUALLY BENEFICIAL TO THE LABOURING CLASS. — MACHINERY ADVANTAGEOUS TO THE LABOURING CLASSES. — QUOTATION FROM MACPHERSON ON THE ADVANTAGES OF MACHINERY. — QUOTATION FROM MR. SAY'S TREATISE ON POLITICAL ECONOMY.

---

MRS. B.

**I** HAVE some further remarks to make to you on the nature of capital.

A land-owner, when he increases his wealth by savings from his income, may probably, instead of employing the whole of his additional capital on husbandmen, find it more advantageous to lay out some part of it on workmen to build barns and outhouses, to store his crops and shelter his cattle ;

he may plant trees to produce timber, build cottages, and bring into cultivation some of the waste land on his farm.

A manufacturer also, in proportion as he increases the number of his workmen, must enlarge his machinery or implements of industry.

CAROLINE.

But the capital laid out in buildings, tools, and machinery will not yield a profit like that which is employed in the payment of workmen, the produce of whose labour is brought to market?

MRS. B.

The farmer and manufacturer would not lay out their capital in this way, did they not expect to reap a profit from it. If a farmer has no barn or granary for his corn, he will be compelled to sell his crops immediately after the harvest, although he might probably dispose of them to greater advantage by keeping them some time longer. So a manufacturer, by improving or enlarging his machinery, can, with less labour, perform a greater quantity of work, and his profits will be proportionate.

CAROLINE.

No doubt if he employ machines instead of men, he will have no wages to pay, and the whole will be profit.

MRS. B.

Thus, for instance, when a manufacturer can

afford to establish a steam-engine, and use a stream of vapour as a substitute for the labour of men and horses, he saves the expense of more than half the number of hands he before employed.

The capital laid out in this manner is called *fixed capital*; because it becomes fixed, either in land, in buildings, in machinery or implements of art; it is by keeping this capital in possession, and using it, that it produces an income. Whilst the capital employed in the maintenance of productive labourers, whose work is sold and affords an immediate profit, is distinguished by the name of *circulating capital*.

The produce of a farm, or the goods of a manufacturer, afford no profit until they are brought to market, and sold or exchanged for other things. This description of capital is, therefore, constantly circulating. It is transferred first from the master to the labourer, in the form of wages and raw materials, then from the labourer it is returned to the master, in the form of produce or workmanship of increased value; but the latter does not realise his profits until this produce is sold to the public, by which it is consumed.

CAROLINE.

I think I understand the difference between *fixed* and *circulating capital* perfectly. A farmer derives profit from his implements of husbandry by their use, while kept in his possession; and from his

crops by parting with them. But to which kind of capital should the farming cattle be referred?

MRS. B.

It depends upon the nature of the cattle. The value of the labouring cattle is fixed capital, like the implements of agriculture; thus, the horses which draw the plough, as well as the plough itself, are fixed capital. But sheep and oxen intended for market are circulating capital.

CAROLINE.

But should the plough be drawn by oxen, Mrs. B., how would you settle the point then? for whilst they labour for the farmer they are fixed capital; but when they are sold to the butcher they become circulating capital.

MRS. B.

They alternately belong to each of these descriptions of capital; because the farmer makes his profit, first by keeping, and afterwards by selling them.

CAROLINE.

I do not understand why you should call the maintenance of labouring *men* circulating capital, whilst you consider that of labouring *cattle* as fixed capital: they appear to me to be exactly similar.

MRS. B.

And so they are. The maintenance of cattle as well as that of labourers is circulating capital; that



maintenance is in both cases consumed and reproduced with advantage: it is therefore by parting with it that profits are derived. But the value of the cattle themselves is fixed capital; and if labourers, like cattle, were purchased, instead of being hired, thus becoming the property of their employers, they also would be fixed capital.

CAROLINE.

And this, I suppose, is the case with the poor Africans in the West Indies?

MRS. B.

Yes, and with slaves of every description. Even the peasantry of Russia and Poland are in general considered as fixed capital, because their state of vassalage is such as to amount to slavery, the proprietors of the land having a right to their labour without remuneration: and the value of an estate in Russia is not estimated by the number of acres, but the number of slaves upon it; in the same manner as a West Indian plantation. A similar state of vassalage prevailed throughout most parts of Europe some centuries ago; but in later times the progress of civilisation has been such, that I believe every country, excepting Russia and Poland, has emancipated the labouring classes; experience having proved that the more free and independent men are, the more industrious they become, and the better the land is cultivated.

CAROLINE.

I wish that the West Indian planters could be induced to adopt this opinion.

MRS. B.

The time will no doubt arrive when slavery will be abolished in every civilised country. But important changes ought not to be introduced without extreme caution. The minds of men should be freed from the degrading fetters of ignorance, before they can reap advantage from personal emancipation. An ingenious author observes, "that liberty is an instrument with which men may either make their fortune or destroy themselves; that they should therefore be taught the use of it before it is intrusted to their hands." In all cases we shall find that gradual and progressive improvement is invariably conducive to the happiness of mankind, whilst sudden and violent resolutions are always attended with danger. But we are deviating from our subject.

CAROLINE.

Well then, to return to it. I thought at first that I understood the difference of fixed and circulating capital perfectly; but I find upon reflection, that I am at a loss to determine to which kind of capital several articles of property belong. For instance, does the money laid out in the improvement of land constitute fixed or circulating capital?

MRS. B.

The money laid out on waste land to bring it into a state fit for cultivation, such as inclosing, draining, ditching, preparing the soil, &c. is fixed capital; and so is that which is employed in the improvement of land already cultivated. If it is the proprietor who lays out capital on land which he lets, he receives in remuneration an increase of rent; if the farmer, he makes greater profits. But the money laid out in the regular course of cultivation, such as ploughing, sowing, reaping, &c., consists, as we have before observed, partly in fixed and partly in circulating capital.

CAROLINE.

I must say that I prefer the employment of wealth in the form of circulating, rather than in that of fixed capital. Granaries, barns, machinery, &c. may be advantageous to the proprietors, but they must be injurious to the labouring classes; for the more a man lays out as fixed capital, the less remains to be employed as circulating capital, and therefore the fewer labourers he can maintain.

MRS. B.

You must always remember that the greatest good you can do the labouring classes, is to increase the consumable produce of the country. Whilst plenty of the necessaries of life is raised, it signifies

little to whom it belongs; for whoever may be the proprietors of this wealth, they can derive no advantage from it but by employing it; that is to say, by maintaining with it productive labourers. The more abundant, therefore, this wealth is, the more people will be employed.

Now it is evident that whatever tends to improve or facilitate labour increases the productions of the country; and if fixed capital should eventually occasion the raising a greater produce than circulating capital, it must be more beneficial to the labourers as well as to the capitalist.

CAROLINE.

So it appears; and yet I cannot understand how this operates with regard to machinery. We cannot substitute the powers of nature for human industry without throwing people out of work. How then can the poor derive any benefit from inventions and improvements which prevent their being employed?

MRS. B.

It may appear paradoxical, but it is nevertheless true, that whatever abridges and facilitates labour will *eventually* increase the demand for labourers.

CAROLINE.

Or, in other words, to turn people out of work is the most certain means of procuring them em-

ployment! — This is precisely the objection I was making to the introduction of new machinery.

MRS. B.

The invention of machinery, I allow, is often attended with much partial and temporary inconvenience and hardship; but on the other hand, the advantages resulting from it are almost incalculable both in extent and duration. When any new machine or process whatever which abridges or facilitates labour is adopted, the commodity being produced at less expense falls in price, the low price enables a greater number of persons to become purchasers, the demand for it increases, and the supply augments in proportion; so that it frequently happens that more hands are eventually employed in its fabrication than there were previously to the adoption of the new process. When, for instance, the machine for weaving stockings was first invented, it was considered as a severe hardship on those who had earned a maintenance by knitting them; but the superior facility with which stockings were made in the loom, rendered them so much cheaper, that those, who before were unable to purchase them, could now indulge in the comfort of wearing them, and the prodigious increase of demand for stockings enabled all the knitters to gain a livelihood by spinning the materials that were to be woven into stockings.

CAROLINE.

That was a resource in former times, but household spinning is scarcely ever seen since Arkwright's invention of spinning jennies. Where are the spinners now to find employment? The improvements in machinery drive these poor workmen from one expedient to another, till I fear at last every resource will be exhausted.

MRS. B.

No; that cannot be the case. Where there is capital the poor will always find employment. In countries possessed of great wealth we see prodigious works undertaken. Roads cut through hills, canals uniting distant rivers, magnificent bridges, splendid edifices, and a variety of other enterprises which give work to thousands, independently of the usual employment of capital in agriculture, manufactures, and trade. What is the reason of all this? It is in order that the rich may employ their capital; for in a secure and free government no man will suffer any part of it to lie idle; the demand for labour is therefore proportioned to the extent of capital. Industry, we have already observed, knows no other limits. The capitalist who employs a new machine is no doubt the immediate gainer by it; but it is the public who derive from it the greatest and most lasting advantage. It is they who profit by the diminution of price of the goods

fabricated by the machine; and, singular as it may appear, no class of the public receives greater benefit from the introduction of those processes which abridge manual labour, than the working classes, as it is they who are most interested in the cheapness of the goods.

CAROLINE.

Well, Mrs. B., I must confess myself vanquished, and beg pardon of Mr. Watts for having ventured to doubt the beneficial effects of his steam-engine; and of Sir Richard Arkwright for having found fault with his spinning jennies.

MRS. B.

I will read you a passage in Macpherson's History of Commerce, which will show you the degree of estimation in which the inventions of Arkwright were held by that writer.

“ If Mr. Arkwright made a great fortune, he  
“ certainly deserved it; for the advantages he con-  
“ ferred upon the nation were infinitely greater  
“ than those he acquired for himself; and far more  
“ solid and durable than a hundred conquests.  
“ Instead of depriving the working poor of em-  
“ ployment by his vast abridgment of labour, that  
“ very abridgment has created a vast deal of work  
“ for more hands than were formerly employed;  
“ and it was computed that in 1785, about 25  
“ years after the invention of his spinning jennies,

“ half a million of people were employed in the  
“ cotton manufactures of Lancashire, Cheshire,  
“ Derby, Nottingham, and Leicester. And it is  
“ but justice to the memory of Sir Richard Ark-  
“ wright to say, that he was unquestionably one  
“ of the greatest friends to the manufacturing and  
“ commercial interests of this country, and to the  
“ interest of the cotton planters in almost all parts  
“ of the world, and that his name ought to be  
“ transmitted to future ages, along with those of  
“ the most distinguished benefactors of mankind.”

CAROLINE.

This is indeed a magnificent eulogium of Sir Richard Arkwright, but not more so, it appears, than he really deserves.

MRS. B.

I shall conclude my observations on the benefits arising from machinery, by reading to you some remarks on the invention of printing, extracted from Mr. Say's excellent treatise on Political Economy.

“ Au moment ou elle fut employée une foule de  
“ copistes dûrent rester inoccupés, car on peut  
“ estimer qu'un seul ouvrier imprimeur fait autant  
“ de besogne que 200 copistes. Il faut donc  
“ croire que 199 ouvriers sur 200 restèrent sans  
“ ouvrage. Hé bien, la facilité de lire les ouvrages



“ imprimés, plus grande que pour les ouvrages  
“ manuscrits, le bas prix auquel les livres tombè-  
“ rent, l’encouragement que cette invention donna  
“ aux auteurs pour en composer un bien plus grand  
“ nombre, soit d’instruction, soit d’amusement ;  
“ toutes ces causes firent, qu’au bout de très peu  
“ de temps, il y eut plus d’ouvriers imprimeurs  
“ employés, qu’il n’y avoit auparavant de copistes.  
“ Et si à présent on pouvoit calculer exactement  
“ non seulement le nombre des ouvriers impri-  
“ meurs, mais encore des industriels que l’impri-  
“ merie fait travailler, comme graveurs de poin-  
“ çons, fondeurs de caractères, relieurs, libraires,  
“ on trouveroit, peut-être, que le nombre des per-  
“ sonnes occupées par la fabrication des livres est  
“ cent fois plus grand que celui qu’elle occupoit  
“ avant l’invention de l’imprimerie.”

## CAROLINE.

And the number of readers must have increased in a still greater proportion. You may recollect observing, in our conversation on the division of labour, that the invention of printing was a circumstance most favourable to the diffusion of knowledge.

But a considerable increase would not, in the case of every commodity produced by machinery, be required ?

MRS. B.

Certainly not. It is not a necessary consequence of the invention of machinery, that more hands should be required in the manufacture where it is applied; the additional quantity of the commodity produced by the same number of hands will in some instances be sufficient to supply the increased demand. But supposing even that no augmentation of the commodity should be required, and that a certain number of hands should be dismissed in consequence of the abridgment of labour, the capital thus economised, by being applied to some other purpose, is an advantage both to the proprietor and the public, and eventually affords employment for the labourers thrown out of work.

Thus you see that capital, whether fixed or circulating, invariably promotes the increase of the produce of the country; we may, therefore, I think, define capital to be any accumulated produce which tends to facilitate future productions. And the capital of a country is composed of the aggregate property of all its inhabitants.

## CONVERSATION VIII.

---

### ON WAGES AND POPULATION.

**EXTREME LIMIT OF WAGES. — WAGES REGULATED BY THE PROPORTION WHICH CAPITAL BEARS TO POPULATION. — SMALL CAPITAL CREATES SMALL DEMAND FOR LABOUR, LOW WAGES, AND GREAT PROFIT TO THE CAPITALIST. — INCREASE OF CAPITAL CREATES GREATER DEMAND FOR LABOUR, HIGHER WAGES, AND LESS PROFIT TO THE CAPITALIST. — NECESSITY OF RAISING SUBSISTENCE BEFORE OTHER WORKS ARE UNDERTAKEN. — HOW WAGES ARE LOWERED BY THE INCREASE OF POPULATION WITHOUT AN INCREASE OF CAPITAL. — EFFECT OF SCARCITY OF PROVISIONS ON WAGES. — EFFECT OF RAISING WAGES DURING A SCARCITY. — OF A MAXIMUM PRICE OF PROVISIONS. — EFFECT OF DIMINUTION OF POPULATION BY SICKNESS ON THE RATE OF WAGES. — IT IS NOT WORK BUT FUNDS THAT CREATE A DEMAND FOR LABOUR. — WAGES IN IRELAND. — WAGES IN TOWN AND COUNTRY.**

---

**MRS. B.**

**IN our last conversation I think we came to this conclusion, that capital is almost as beneficial to**

the poor as to the rich ; for though the property of the one, it is by its nature destined for the maintenance of the other.

CAROLINE.

It comes to the labourer in the form of wages ; but as we must allow the capitalist a profit on his work, I should like very much to know what proportion that profit bears to the wages of the labourer ?

MRS. B.

It varies extremely, but the wages of the labourer can never be permanently less than will afford him the means of living, otherwise he could not labour.

CAROLINE.

On the other hand, they can never be equal to the whole value of the work he produces ; for if his master made no profit by him he would not employ him.

MRS. B.

Such then are the two extremes of the wages of labour, but they admit of many intermediate degrees of variation. If besides furnishing subsistence for himself, the wages of the labourer would not enable him to maintain a wife and bring up a family, the class of labourers would gradually diminish, and the scarcity of hands would then raise their wages which would enable them to live with

more comfort and rear a family ; but as the capitalist will always keep wages as low as he can, the labourer and his family can seldom command more than the necessaries of life.

CAROLINE.

By the necessaries of life do you mean such things only as are indispensably necessary for its support ?

MRS. B.

No ; I mean such food, clothing, and general accommodation, as the climate and custom of the country have rendered essential to the preservation of the life, health, and decent appearance of the lowest classes of the people. Fuel, for instance, and warm clothing, are necessary articles in this country ; but they are not so in Africa. Civilisation and the progress of wealth and manufactures have greatly extended the scale of necessaries ; the use of linen is now considered as necessary by all classes of people, and shoes and stockings, in England at least, almost equally so. Houses with glazed windows and a chimney are become necessities ; for if our poor were deprived of such accommodation it would very materially increase mortality amongst them. In Ireland the peasantry bring up their children in a mud-cabin, the door of which answers also the purposes of window and chimney.

CAROLINE.

Then would it not be better that the labouring classes here should, like the Irish, accustom themselves to hardships and inconveniences, rather than indulge in a degree of comfortable accommodation, the privation of which, in a season of distress, is attended with so much misery?

MRS. B.

No; I would on the contrary wish rather to extend than contract the scale of the necessaries of life. There is more health, more cleanliness, more intellect, and more happiness, developed in an English cottage than in an Irish cabin. There is more strength, vigour, and industry in an English peasant, who feeds on meat, bread, and vegetables, than in an Irish one, who subsists on potatoes alone.

CAROLINE.

No doubt I would wish the lower classes every comfort which they can afford; but as their wages will not always allow them such gratifications, I thought it might be better that they should not be accustomed to them.

MRS. B.

By lowering the scale of the comforts and accommodations of the poor, you not only diminish their enjoyments, but deprive them of a resource

in seasons of distress. If their usual fare is confined to the bare necessities of life, they cannot be reduced lower; and when a scarcity occurs, a famine must ensue. This is the case with the Hindoos, who subsist almost wholly on rice; when this supply fails, they perish by thousands.

CAROLINE.

It is then most desirable that the rate of wages should be such as to afford the lower classes something beyond a mere subsistence; but what is it that determines the rate of wages?

MRS. B.

It depends upon the proportion which capital bears to the labouring part of the population of the country.

CAROLINE.

Or, in other words, to the proportion which subsistence bears to the number of people to be maintained by it?

MRS. B.

Yes; it is this alone which regulates the rate of wages, when they are left to pursue their natural course. It is this alone which creates or destroys the demand for labour. In order to render it more clear to you, let us simplify the question by examining it on a small scale — let us suppose, for instance, that we have founded a colony in a desert island;

that the settlers have divided the land amongst them, and cultivated it for their own subsistence; and that being both proprietors and labourers, they reap the whole reward of their industry. Thus situated, should a ship be wrecked on the coast, and some of the crew effect their escape to shore, what would ensue? They would furnish a supply of labourers, who would be dependent on the original settlers for maintenance and employment.

CAROLINE.

But if those settlers have not raised a greater quantity of subsistence than is necessary for their own use, how can they maintain the new-comers? Without capital, you know, they cannot employ labourers.

MRS. B.

You are perfectly right. But it is probable that the most industrious of them will have raised somewhat more subsistence than is absolutely necessary for their own consumption. They will possess some little stock in reserve, which will enable them to maintain and employ at least a few of the shipwrecked crew. Yet as these poor destitute men will all be anxious to share in this little surplus, each will offer his labour in exchange for the smallest pittance that will support life. Thus the capital of the island being inadequate to the maintenance of



its population, the competition amongst the labourers to get employment will render wages extremely low, and the capitalist will derive a high profit from the industry of his labourers. A small capital, therefore, creates but a small demand for labour.

CAROLINE.

By demand for labour do you mean the demand of the poor for work, or of the capitalist for workmen ?

MRS. B.

Certainly the latter. The demand for labour means the demand for labourers by those who have the means of paying them for their work, whether it be in the form of wages, maintenance, or any other kind of remuneration.

But what will happen in our colony, when the labourers shall have richly repaid their employers by the fruit of their industry ?

CAROLINE.

By raising a more plentiful harvest they would of course have a more plentiful subsistence.

MRS. B.

The harvest, you must observe, belongs, not to the men who produced it, but to their employers ; how, therefore, does it follow of course that the labourers obtain a larger share of it ?

CAROLINE.

I suppose that their masters having more capital, are willing to bestow a larger proportion of it on their labourers.

MRS. B.

I believe that the capitalist will always make as high a profit as he can upon the work of his labourers; and that when his capital increases, he will choose rather to increase the number of his workmen than the rate of their wages. But the power of employing more labourers increases the demand for labour; and this, as I shall explain to you, eventually raises the wages or reward of labour.

The capital of the settlers will probably be so much augmented by the industry of the labourers, that there will no longer be any difficulty in maintaining the new-comers. The possessors of this increased capital will be eager to procure the services of the labourers; one perhaps to build a hut, another to fence a field, a third to construct a boat, and so on. For the surplus, unless employed, will yield no profit; the competition therefore will no longer be amongst the labourers to obtain work, but amongst the masters to obtain workmen; and this will necessarily raise the price of wages, and consequently diminish the profits of the capitalist.

CAROLINE.

Oh, that is very clear. If John offers a man a shilling a day to work at his house, and Thomas gives eighteen-pence to those who will build his boat, while James pays two shillings for fencing his field; wages must rise to two shillings a day: for if John and Thomas did not give as much as James, the latter would monopolise all the labourers.

MRS. B.

You see therefore that it is the additional capital produced by the labour of these men, which by increasing the demand for labour raises their wages. Thus whenever capital for the maintenance of labourers abounds, the capitalist must content himself with smaller profits, and allow his workmen a more liberal remuneration.

CAROLINE.

Oh, that is charming! that is exactly what I wish. But, Mrs. B., if, during the second year, our colonists employ their labourers in building houses and fencing fields, instead of cultivating them, subsistence will again fall short, and the labourers will be reduced to their former necessitous condition; unless having once experienced such distress, they guard against it in future.

MRS. B.

That does not depend on the choice of the labourers, who must do the work they are hired to perform, of whatever nature it may be. But their employers will be careful to provide for their maintenance, for they know that those who should neglect to make such a provision for their future services would be deprived of them. They cannot work without subsistence, nor will they work without an ample subsistence whilst any of the colony has it to offer them. If John therefore does not raise so great a harvest as James, he will not be able, the following year, to employ so many workmen. Each landed proprietor therefore will take care to direct the labour of his workmen towards raising the requisite subsistence, before he employs them in any other description of labour: it is for this subsistence that there will be the greatest demand, and it is demand which regulates supply.

Now let us suppose that the shipwrecked crew had brought wives with them, and reared families: would that have affected the rate of wages?

CAROLINE.

Their wages would remain the same; but as they would have to maintain their wives and children as well as themselves, they would not fare so well.

MRS. B.

And if there were not food enough for them all, the most weakly of the children would die, not precisely of hunger, but of some of those diseases which want of sufficient and proper food engenders. It is evident, therefore, that a labourer ought not to marry unless his wages are adequate to the maintenance of a family; or unless he has, like your gardener, some little provision in store to make up the deficiency.

Suppose now, after several years of prosperity, that a hurricane makes such devastation amongst the crops of our colonists as to reduce the harvest to one half what it was the preceding year; what effect would this have on the wages of labour?

CAROLINE.

It would unquestionably reduce them, for the stock of subsistence would be diminished. But in what manner the reduction would take effect I do not clearly see.

MRS. B.

In order to trace its consequences step by step, we may suppose that John, finding his capital will not maintain more than one half of the number of labourers he before employed, reluctantly discharges the other half. These poor men wander about the colony seeking for work; but instead of finding any, they meet only with companions in distress, who

have lost their employment for similar reasons; thus without resource they return to their masters, and entreat to be employed on lower terms. John, who had discharged these men, not for want of work to give them, but for want of funds to pay them, is happy in his reduced circumstances to employ labourers at lower wages. He therefore makes a new agreement with them, and determines to discharge those whom he had originally retained in his service unless they will consent to work for him on the same terms. These men, aware of the difficulty of finding employment elsewhere, are compelled by necessity to accept the conditions, and thus wages are reduced to one half their former rate throughout the colony.

CAROLINE.

It appears as evident as possible. I have only one objection to make, which is, that though this may be the case in our colony, it certainly is not so in other places. Wages, so far from being reduced, are, I believe, frequently raised during a scarcity; at least there are great complaints amongst the poor if that is not done.

MRS. B.

In countries where money is used, it is unnecessary to make any reduction in the rate of wages during a scarcity, because the high price of provisions

produces a similar effect. If you continue to pay your labourer the same wages when the articles of provision on which he subsists have doubled in price, his wages are less efficient by one half, because he can procure with them only one half of what he did before the scarcity.

CAROLINE.

But this is a kind of imposition upon the poor labourers, who, I suppose, are at least as ignorant as I am of political economy, and are not aware that a shilling can purchase more at one time than it can at another, and therefore during a scarcity continue to work at the usual rate of wages for want of knowing better.

MRS. B.

Knowledge in this instance would only teach them that they must bear with patience an unavoidable evil. The alternative for capitalists, when capital is diminished, is to reduce, either the number of their labourers, or the rate of their wages—or rather, I should say, the remuneration of their labour; for the money-wages remain the same. Now is it not more equitable to divide the maintenance amongst the whole of the labouring class, than to feed some of them amply, whilst the remainder starve?

CAROLINE.

No doubt it is; but would it not, in this instance, be allowable for the legislature to interfere, and oblige the capitalist to raise the rate of wages in proportion to the rise of price of provisions, so as to afford the labourers their usual quantity of subsistence? I think the rate of wages ought to be regulated by the price of bread, as that is the principal subsistence of the poor; so as to enable them to purchase the same quantity of bread whatever its price may be.

MRS. B.

Or, in other words, that every man may eat his usual quantity of bread, however deficient the harvest is in its produce; for unless you could find means to increase the quantity of subsistence, it will avail nothing to raise the rate of wages.

CAROLINE.

Very true; yet two shillings will purchase twice the quantity of bread that one will; is not that true also Mrs. B.? and yet these truths appear incompatible.

MRS. B.

One of them must therefore be an error; two shillings would not purchase twice the quantity of bread that one did if wages were doubled, because provisions would continue to rise in price in proportion to the advance on wages.



CAROLINE.

But I would prohibit the farmer from raising the price of his corn and his cattle, and then there would be no necessity for the butcher and the baker raising the price of meat and bread. It is not just that the farmer, when he has a bad crop, should throw his misfortune on the public, and be the only person who does not suffer from it; which is the case if he raises the price of his produce in proportion to its scarcity.

MRS. B.

The farmer consumes as well as produces provisions; and as a consumer he partakes of the evil of the advance of price. If he sell his corn for twice the usual price, what he consumes at home stands him in the same value, for such is the price it would fetch at market.

But supposing it were possible to prevent the rise in price during a scarcity, what consequences would ensue? Keep in mind the important point, that the harvest has yielded but half its usual product; that whilst the wages of labour and the price of provisions undergo no alteration, the labourers purchase and consume the usual quantity of food, and at the end of six months . . . .

CAROLINE.

You need not finish the sentence, Mrs. B.; at

the end of six months the whole stock of provisions would be consumed, and the people who excited my commiseration would be starved.

MRS. B.

This would infallibly be the case, were such a measure persevered in; but though it has often been attempted by sovereigns more benevolent than wise to set limits to the price of provisions, the consequences soon became so formidable as to compel the legislature to put a stop to a remedy which was as ineffectual as it was pernicious. "In the year \* 1815 England was afflicted by a "famine, grievous beyond all that ever were known "before, which raised the price of provisions far "above the reach of the people of middling classes. "The parliament, in compassion to the general "distress, ordered that all articles of food should "be sold at moderate prices, which they took "upon themselves to prescribe. The consequence "was, that all things, instead of being sold at or "under the maximum price fixed by them, became dearer than before, or were entirely withheld from the market. Poultry were rarely to be seen. Butchers' meat was not to be found at all. The sheep were dying of a pestilence, and "all kinds of grain were selling at most enormous

\* Macpherson's Annals of Commerce.

“ prices. Early the next year the parliament, “ finding their mistake, left provisions to find their “ own price.”

Thus you see that the rise in the price of provisions is the natural remedy to the evil of scarcity. It is the means of husbanding the short stock of food, and making it last out to the ensuing harvest. Government should never interfere, either with the price of provisions or the rate of wages; they will each find their respective level if left uncontrolled.

But to return to our colony. What effect would it produce on wages, were some contagious malady to carry off one half of the labourers?

CAROLINE.

It would increase the demand for the labour of those which remained, and consequently raise their wages.

MRS. B.

We may generally state, therefore, that when the number of labourers remains the same, the rate of wages will increase with the increase of capital, and lower with the diminution of it; and that if the amount of capital remain the same, the rate of wages will fall as the number of labourers increase, and rise as the number of labourers diminish; or, as mathematicians would express it, the rate of

wages varies directly as the quantity of capital, and inversely as the number of labourers.

Macpherson mentions that “ a dreadful pestilence, which originated in the eastern regions, began its ravages in England in the year 1348, and is said to have carried off the greater part of the people, especially in the lower ranks of life. The surviving labourers took advantage of the demand for labour and the scarcity of hands to raise their prices. The king, Edward I., thereupon enacted the statute of labourers, which ordained that all men and women under 60 years of age, whether of free or servile condition, having no occupation or property, should serve any person of whom they should be required, and should receive only the wages which were usual before the year 1346, or in the five or six preceding years, on pain of imprisonment, the employers being also punishable for giving greater wages. Artificers were also prohibited from demanding more than the old wages; and butchers, bakers, brewers, &c. were ordered to sell their provisions at reasonable prices. The ‘servants having no regard to the said ordinance, but to their ease and singular covetise,’ refused to serve unless for higher wages than the law allowed them. Therefore the parliament, by another statute, fixed the yearly and daily wages of agricultural servants, artificers, and labourers,

“ the payment of threshing corn by the quarter,  
 “ and even the price of shoes. They also forbid  
 “ any person to leave the town in summer wherein  
 “ he had dwelt in the winter, or to remove from  
 “ one shire to another.

“ Thus were the lower classes debarred by laws,  
 “ which in their own nature must be inefficient,  
 “ from making any effort to improve their situation  
 “ in life.”

CAROLINE.

I had always imagined that a great demand for labour was occasioned by some great work that was to be executed, such as digging a canal, making new roads, cutting through hills, &c.; but it seems that the demand for labour depends, not so much on the quantity of work to be done as on the quantity of subsistence provided for the workmen.

MRS. B.

Work to be performed is the immediate cause of the demand for labour; but however great or important is the work which a man may wish to undertake, the execution of it must always be limited by the extent of his capital; that is to say, by the funds he possesses for the maintenance or payment of his labourers. The same observation applies to the capital of a country, which is only an aggregate of the capital of individuals; it cannot

*4. work to be performed is  
 capital*

employ more people than it has the means of maintaining. All the waste land capable of cultivation in the country might be called work to be done; but one must have, not only labourers to do that work, but a sufficient quantity of subsistence to support them. In our conversation on capital we observed, that in countries of large capital great works were undertaken, such as public buildings, bridges, iron rail-ways, canals, &c. All these things are a sign of redundancy of wealth.

CAROLINE.

In Ireland I understand that the wages of common labourers are much lower than in England; is it on account of the capital of that country being less adequate to the maintenance of its population?

MRS. B.

That is, no doubt, one of the principal causes of the low price of labour in that country; but there are many other causes which affect the price of labour, arising from the imperfection of its government. The Irish are far less industrious than the English. Arthur Young, in his travels through Ireland, observes, that "husbandry-labour is  
" *very low-priced*, but not *cheap*. Two shillings  
" a-day in Suffolk is cheaper than sixpence a-day  
" in Cork. If a Huron would dig for two-pence  
" a-day, I have little doubt but that it might be  
" *dearer than the Irishman's sixpence.*"

CAROLINE.

But, Mrs. B., the price of labour does not only vary in different countries, but very considerably in different parts of the same country. In purchasing some cutlery a few days ago, I was shown country and town-made knives and forks, apparently the same, yet the difference in price was considerable. Upon enquiring the cause, I was informed that it was owing to wages being so much higher in London than in the country.

MRS. B.

And if you had enquired the cause of the high rate of wages of London workmen, you would have heard that it was on account of their being better workmen; the ablest artificers generally resort to London, as the place where their skill will be most duly appreciated, and where their employers can best afford to reward it.

It is but just to remunerate labourers according to their ability. Your head-gardener does less work than any of the men under him; yet he has the highest wages, on account of the skill and experience he has acquired. A working silversmith has on this account higher wages than a tailor or a carpenter.

But where skill is not requisite, the hardest and most disagreeable kinds of labour are best paid;

this is the case with blacksmiths, iron-founders, coal-heavers, &c.

A consideration is also had for arts of an unwholesome, unpleasant, or dangerous nature; such as painters, miners, gunpowder makers, and a variety of other analogous employments.



## CONVERSATION IX.

---

### ON WAGES AND POPULATION.

*Continued.*

HIGH WAGES NOT INVARIABLY ACCOMPANYING GREAT CAPITAL.—GREAT CAPITAL AND LOW WAGES IN CHINA.—SMALL CAPITAL AND HIGH WAGES IN AMERICA.—ADVANTAGES OF NEW-SETTLED COUNTRIES.—POVERTY THE NATURAL CHECK TO POPULATION.—GREAT POPULATION ADVANTAGEOUS ONLY WHEN RESULTING FROM PLENTY.—INCREASING WEALTH PREFERABLE TO ANY STATIONARY CAPITAL.—MISTAKE IN ENCOURAGING POPULATION.—POPULATION OF MANUFACTURING TOWNS.—INDUSTRY.—PIECE-WORK.

---

CAROLINE.

I HAVE been reflecting a great deal on our last conversation, Mrs. B.; and the conclusions I have drawn from it are, that the greater the capital a country possesses, the greater number of people it can maintain, and the higher the wages of labour will be.

MRS. B.

The greater the stock of subsistence, the more people may be maintained by it, no doubt; but your second inference is not at all a necessary conclusion. China is a very rich country, and yet wages are, I believe, no where so low. The accounts which travellers give of the miserable state of the inferior classes are painful to hear; and their poverty is not the result of idleness, for they run about the streets with tools in their hands, begging for work.

CAROLINE.

That is owing to the immense population of China; so that, though the capital of the country may be very considerable, still it is insufficient for the maintenance of all its inhabitants.

MRS. B.

You should therefore always remember that the rate of wages does not depend upon the absolute quantity of capital, but upon its quantity relative to the number of people to be maintained by it. This is a truth which, however simple, is continually lost sight of, and hence arise errors without number in political economy. If China had ten times the wealth it actually possesses, and its population were at the same time tenfold as numerous, the people would not be better fed.

America, on the other hand, is a country of very

small capital, and yet wages are remarkably high there.

CAROLINE.

How do you account for that; for the demand for labour, you know, can be only in proportion to the extent of capital?

MRS. B.

The capital of America, though small when compared with those of the countries of Europe, is very considerable in proportion to the number of people to be maintained by it. In America, and in all newly-settled countries as yet thinly inhabited, the wages of labour are high, because capital increases with prodigious rapidity. Where land is plentiful and productive, and the labourers to cultivate it scarce, the competition amongst the landholders to obtain labourers is so great as to enable this class to raise their demands; and the higher the wages the labourer receives, the sooner he has it in his power to purchase a piece of land and become landholder himself. Thus the class of labourers is continually passing into the class of proprietors, and making room for a fresh influx of labourers, both from the rising generation and from emigrations from foreign countries.

CAROLINE.

America has then the double advantage of high wages and low price of land; no wonder that it is so thriving a country.

MRS. B.

The progress of wealth and improvement is no where so rapid as in the settlement of a civilised people in a new country; provided they establish laws for the security of their property, they require no other incitement to industry. In the new settlements of America, where the experienced farmer with his European implements of husbandry is continually encroaching on the barren wilderness, want is almost unknown, and a state of universal prosperity prevails. We may form some judgment of the rapid increase of their capital by that of their population. The facility with which the Americans acquire a maintenance sufficient to bring up a family encourages early marriages, and gives rise to numerous families; the children are well fed, thriving, and healthy; you may imagine how small are the proportion that die in comparison to the number born, when I inform you that their population doubles itself in about 23 years!

CAROLINE.

But does not such an immense increase of population reduce the rate of wages?

MRS. B.

No; because their capital increases in a still greater proportion; and as long as that is the case, wages, you know, will rise rather than fall. But

H

what I have said relative to America refers only to the United States of that country ; which have the advantage of a free government protecting the property of all classes of men. In the Spanish settlements, where the government is of a very different description, the condition of the people is far less flourishing. The population of Mexico, one of the finest provinces of Spanish America, does not double itself in less than 48 years.

CAROLINE.

Yet I do not well understand why the poor should be worse off in England where there is a large capital, than in America where there is a small one.

MRS. B.

Because you are again forgetting the fundamental rule which I have laid down for you, that capital must always be considered with reference to the number of people to be employed and maintained by it.

In England, and all the old-established countries of Europe, the population has gradually increased till it has equalled the means of subsistence ; and as Europe no longer affords the same facility for the growth of capital as a newly-settled country, if the population goes on augmenting, it may exceed the means of subsistence, and in that case the wages of labour will fall instead of rising, and the condition of the poor become very miserable.

CAROLINE.

But how is it possible for population to increase beyond the means of subsistence? Men cannot live without eating.

MRS. B.

No; but they may live upon a smaller portion of food than is necessary to maintain them in health and vigour; children may be born without their parents having the means of providing for them. Increase of population therefore, under such circumstances, cannot be permanent; its progress will be checked by distress and disease, and this I apprehend to be one of the causes of the reduced state of the poor in this country.

CAROLINE.

I declare I always thought that it was very desirable to have a great population. All rich thriving countries are populous; great cities are populous; wealth, which you esteem so advantageous to a country, encourages population; and population in its turn promotes wealth, for labourers produce more than they consume. You recollect how rich our colony became by the acquisition of the labour of the ship-wrecked crew: their first arrival was attended with some inconvenience, it is true; but I should say as you do with respect to machinery, the inconvenience is small and temporary, the advantage both durable and extensive.

MRS. B.

*Pop must be  
sustained  
by means of  
subsistence*

A great population is highly advantageous to a country, where there is a capital which will afford wages sufficient for a labourer to bring up his children; for population is not usually increased by the acquisition of a number of able labourers, (as was the case in our colony,) but by the birth of helpless infants, who depend entirely upon their parents for subsistence. If this subsistence is not provided, the children are born merely to languish a few years in poverty, and to fall early victims to disease, brought on by want and wretchedness. Under such circumstances, they can increase neither the strength, the wealth, nor the happiness of the country. On the contrary, they weaken, impoverish, and render it more miserable. They consume without reproducing, they suffer without enjoying, and they give pain and sorrow to their parents without ever reaching that age when they might reward their paternal cares. Yet such is the lot of many poor children, wherever population exceeds the means of subsistence.

CAROLINE.

What a dreadful reflection this is! But you do not suppose that there are any children actually starved to death?

MRS. B.

I hope not; but the fate of those unfortunate

infants is scarcely less deplorable who perish by slow degrees for want of proper care and a sufficiency of wholesome food. A large family of young children would require the whole of a mother's care and attention; but that mother is frequently obliged to leave them to obtain by hard labour their scanty meal. Want of good nursing, of cleanliness, of fresh air, and of wholesome nourishment, engenders a great variety of diseases, which either carry them off, or leave them in such a state of weakness that they fall a sacrifice to the first contagious malady which attacks them. It is to this state of debility, as well as to the want of medical advice and judicious treatment, that must be attributed the mortality occasioned by the small-pox and measles amongst the lower classes of children, so much greater than in those of the upper ranks of society.

Nor are the fatal effects of an excess of population confined to children. A sick man, who might be restored to health by medical assistance and a proper diet, perishes, because he cannot afford to obtain either. A delicate or an infirm woman requires repose and indulgence which she cannot command. The necessities of life vary not only with the climate and customs of a country, but with the age, sex, and infirmities of the individuals who inhabit it; and wherever these necessities are deficient, mortality prevails.



Do you understand now, why the rate of wages and the condition of the poor are better in countries which, like America, are growing rich; than in those which, like England, have long accumulated large capitals, but whose wealth is either stationary, or making but slower progress?

CAROLINE.

Yes; it is because when capital augments very rapidly, labour is in great demand and well rewarded. But when wealth, however great, has long been stationary, population has risen up to the means of subsistence, or perhaps gone beyond it, so that wages fall, and distress comes on.

MRS. B.

This is what I formerly alluded to, when I told you that you would find that the accession of wealth was more advantageous to a country, as well as to an individual, than the possession of any capital which did not increase.

I must read you a passage of Paley on this subject, in which he expresses himself with remarkable perspicuity.

“ The ease of subsistence and the encourage-  
“ ment of industry depend neither upon the price  
“ of labour, nor upon the price of provisions; but  
“ upon the proportion which the one bears to the

“ other. Now the influx of wealth into a country  
“ naturally tends to advance this proportion ; that  
“ is, every fresh accession of wealth raises the  
“ price of labour, before it raises the price of  
“ provisions.

“ It is not therefore the quantity of wealth col-  
“ lected into a country, but the continual increase  
“ of that quantity, from which the advantage arises  
“ to employment and population. It is only the  
“ accession of wealth which produces the effect ;  
“ and it is only by wealth constantly flowing into,  
“ or springing up in a country, that the effect can  
“ be constant.”

You must not, however, imagine that the capital of this country remains stationary ; on the contrary, we are making rapid advances in wealth, though we cannot pretend to equal the progress of a newly-settled country. The only apprehension is, that population may have been increasing in a still greater ratio than capital. The severe checks which industry has received during these last thirty years, throughout the greater part of Europe, from a constant state of the most expensive warfare, has, I fear, greatly retarded the progress of capital, without equally affecting that of population ; but if the increase of the latter has occasionally outstripped the means of subsistence, it is no less owing to the ill-judged con-

duct of the upper classes than to the imprudence of the lower orders of people.

CAROLINE.

You allude, I suppose, to the encouragement of early marriages amongst the poor ?

MRS. B.

Yes ; we observed that when a great population springs from ample means of subsistence, it is the highest blessing a country can enjoy ; the children brought up in plenty, attain a healthy and vigorous manhood, with strength to defend, and industry to enrich their country. Those who have not reflected on the subject have frequently confounded cause and effect, and have, with you, considered a great population under all circumstances as the cause of prosperity. Hence the most strenuous efforts have been made, not only by individuals, but even by the legislature, to encourage early marriages and large families, conceiving that by so doing they were promoting the happiness and prosperity of their country.

CAROLINE.

This is a most unfortunate error. But when population is again reduced, the evil corrects itself ; for capital being thus rendered more adequate

to the maintenance of this diminished population, the wages of labour will again rise.

MRS. B.

Certainly. But it often happens that as soon as the labouring classes find their condition improved, whether by a diminution of numbers, or an augmentation of capital, which may spring up from some new source of industry, marriages again increase, a greater number of children are reared, and population once more outstrips the means of subsistence; so that the condition of the poor, after a temporary improvement, is again reduced to its former wretchedness.

CAROLINE.

That is precisely what has occurred in the village near which we live. It was formerly, I have heard, but a small hamlet, the inhabitants of which gained a livelihood as farmers' labourers. Many years ago a cotton-manufacture was set up in the neighbourhood, which afforded ample employment for the poor; and even the children, who were before idle, could now earn something towards their maintenance. This, during some years, had an admirable effect in raising the condition of the labouring classes. I have heard my grandfather say that it was wonderful to see how rapidly the village improved, how many new cottages were

built, and what numerous families they contained. But this prosperous state was not of long duration : in the course of time the village became overstocked with labourers, and it is now sunk into a state of poverty and distress worse than that from which it had so recently emerged.

MRS. B.

You see, therefore, that this manufacture, which at first proved a blessing to the village, and might always have continued such, was, by the improvidence of the labourers, converted into an evil. If the population had not increased beyond the demand for labour, the manufacture might still have afforded them the advantages it at first produced.

CAROLINE.

This, then, must be the cause of the misery which so frequently prevails amongst the poor in manufacturing towns, where it would be so natural to expect that the facility of finding work would produce comfort and plenty.

MRS. B.

And it proves that no amelioration of the condition of the poor can be permanent, unless to industry they add prudence and foresight. Were all men as considerate as your gardener, Thomas, and did they not marry till they had secured a pro-

vision for a family, or could earn a sufficiency to maintain it; in short, were children not brought into the world until there was bread to feed them, the distress which you have just been describing would be unknown, excepting in cases of unforeseen misfortunes, or unless produced by idleness or vice.

CAROLINE.

And is it not to these latter causes that a great part of the misery in manufacturing towns should be ascribed? I have heard it observed that skilful workmen, who could earn a livelihood by three or four days' labour in the week, would frequently spend the remainder of it in idleness and profligacy.

MRS. B.

I believe that it is much more common for great gains to act as a stimulus to industry. Like every other human quality, industry improves in proportion to the encouragement it receives, and it can have no greater encouragement and reward than high wages. It sometimes happens, it is true, that workmen act in the way you mention, but such conduct is far from being common; the greater part, when their wages are liberal, keep steadily to their work, and if they are paid by the piece, are even apt to overwork themselves.

CAROLINE.

That I have observed. My father lately agreed to pay a certain sum for digging a sunk fence in our pleasure-grounds; and two of the under-gardeners engaged to do it after the day's work was over. I thought they would repent of their undertaking, when they came to such hard labour, after having performed their usual task; but I was astonished at their alacrity and perseverance: in the course of a week they completed the job, and received the price in addition to their usual wages. I wonder that work is not always paid by the piece, it is such an encouragement to industry.

MRS. B.

All kinds of work do not admit of being so paid; for instance, the care of a garden could not be divided into jobs, and the gardener be paid so much for planting trees, so much for cleaning borders, so much for mowing grass, &c. Besides I doubt whether it would be desirable that this mode of payment should be generally adopted, on account of the temptation it affords to labourers to over-work themselves; for notwithstanding all the advantages of industry, one would never wish it to be pushed to that extreme which would exhaust the strength of the labouring classes, and bring on disease and infirmity. The benefits resulting from industry are an increase of the comforts and con-

veniences of life; but it would be paying too dear for these to purchase them by a sickly and premature old age.

In order to be of permanent service to the labouring classes, we must not rest satisfied with encouraging industry; but we should endeavour by instruction to awaken their minds to a sense of remote consequences, as well as of immediate good, so that when they have succeeded in rendering their condition more comfortable, they may not rashly and inconsiderately increase their numbers beyond the means of subsistence.

CAROLINE.

But if population be constantly kept within the limits of subsistence, would it not always remain stationary?

MRS. B.

Certainly not: if the people are industrious, capital will increase; and the increase of population will follow of course, and with advantage.

CAROLINE.

I now see evidently, that population should never be encouraged, but where there is great plenty of subsistence and employment.

MRS. B.

And *then* it requires no encouragement. If



men so often marry without having made any provision for a family, there is no danger of their not marrying when a subsistence is easily obtained; and their children will be healthy and long-lived in proportion as they are well fed, clothed, and taken care of.

CAROLINE.

I feel considerable satisfaction in having acquired correct ideas on this subject; but the knowledge I have gained is not without alloy. The miseries arising from an excess of population have left a very melancholy impression on my mind.

MRS. B.

That population should tend to press upon the means of subsistence, and render exertion necessary to obtain food, appears to be a law of nature wisely calculated to call into activity the various powers of man. It is to this pressure that we owe the appropriation of land, and the consequent diversity of ranks and conditions which we have observed to be so essential to the progressive improvement of society. It is the foundation-stone of the great structure of civilisation, and the means by which scanty tribes of wandering savages have been transformed into populous nations of civilised beings. If then it produces want and wretchedness to some part of the community, it feeds millions of in-

dustrious happy beings ; and in a well-constituted society, the evil will always tend to diminish, and the good to increase.

CAROLINE.

Yet as the world becomes more populous, the difficulty of procuring subsistence must surely increase ?

MRS. B.

A period may, it is true, one day arrive when the world will be so perfectly cultivated, and so fully peopled, that no further augmentation either of population or of subsistence can take place. How many generations will pass away before that epoch, it is impossible to surmise ; but let us hope that before that period arrives, the human character will be so far improved in virtue and knowledge, that population will no longer trespass upon the bounds of subsistence.

In the present state of the world, the inconvenience arising from this pressure on subsistence is so far from being confined to great nations and populous districts, that it is nowhere so severely felt as among the savage tribes, who are without resource when the supply of food afforded them by the chase, by fishing, or the spontaneous produce of the earth, proves deficient. In India, where the Hindoos subsist on rice alone, famines have repeatedly swept away thousands. The more im-

proved the state of society, the less dreadful are these effects; but it is in newly-settled countries alone, and under free governments, such as the United States of America, that we can look for complete exemption from this evil.

We will conclude this subject by reading a passage in Mr. Malthus's Principles of Political Economy.

“ From high wages, or the power of commanding  
“ a large portion of the necessaries of life, two very  
“ different results may follow ; one, that of a rapid  
“ increase of population, in which case the high  
“ wages are chiefly spent in the maintenance of  
“ large and frequent families ; and the other, that  
“ of a decided improvement in the modes of sub-  
“ sistence, and the conveniences and comforts en-  
“ joyed, without a proportionate acceleration in  
“ the rate of increase.

“ In looking to these different results, the causes  
“ of them will evidently appear to be the different  
“ habits existing among the people of different  
“ countries, and at different times. In an enquiry  
“ into the causes of these different habits, we shall  
“ generally be able to trace those which produce  
“ the first result to all the circumstances which  
“ contribute to depress the lower classes of the  
“ people, which make them unable or unwilling to  
“ reason from the past to the future, and ready to  
“ acquiesce, for the sake of present gratification,

“ in a very low standard of comfort and respect-  
“ ability ; and those which produce the second re-  
“ sult, to all the circumstances which tend to ele-  
“ vate the character of the lower classes of society,  
“ which make them approach the nearest to beings  
“ who ‘ look before and after,’ and who conse-  
“ quently cannot acquiesce patiently in the thought  
“ of depriving themselves and their children of the  
“ means of being respectable, virtuous, and happy.

“ Among the circumstances which contribute to  
“ the character first described, the most efficient  
“ will be found to be despotism, oppression, and  
“ ignorance : among those which contribute to the  
“ latter character, civil and political liberty, and  
“ education.”

## CONVERSATION X.

---

### ON THE CONDITION OF THE POOR.

OF THE CULTIVATION OF COMMONS AND WASTE  
LANDS.—OF EMIGRATION.—EDUCATION OF THE  
LOWER CLASSES. — BENEFIT CLUBS. — SAVING  
BANKS.—PAROCHIAL RELIEF.—ALMS AND PRI-  
VATE CHARITIES. — REWARDS.

---

CAROLINE.

I HAVE been reflecting ever since our last interview, Mrs. B., whether there were no means of averting or at least alleviating the misery resulting from an excess of population, and it appears to me that though we have not the same resource in land as America; yet we have large tracts of waste land, which, by being brought into cultivation, would produce an additional stock of subsistence.

MRS. B.

You must remember that industry is limited by the extent of capital, and that no more labourers can be employed than we have the means of maintaining; they work for their daily bread, and without obtaining it, they neither could nor would work. All the labourers which the capital of the country can maintain being disposed of, the only question is, whether it be better to employ them on land already in a state of cultivation, or in breaking up and bringing into culture new lands; and this point may safely be trusted to the decision of the landed proprietors, as it is no less their interest than that of the labouring classes that the greatest possible quantity of produce should be raised. To a certain extent it has been found more advantageous to lay out capital in improving the culture of old land, rather than to employ it in bringing new land into tillage; because the soil of the waste land is extremely poor and ungrateful, and requires a great deal to be laid out on it before it brings in a return. But there is often capital sufficient for both these purposes; and of late years we have seen not only prodigious improvements in the processes of agriculture throughout the country, but a great number of commons inclosed and cultivated.

CAROLINE.

I fear you will think me inconsistent, but I can-

not help regretting the inclosure of commons ; they are the only resource of the cottagers for the maintenance of a few lean cattle. Let me once more quote my favourite Goldsmith : —

“ Where, then, ah ! where shall poverty reside,  
“ To ’scape the pressure of contiguous pride ?  
“ If to some common’s fenceless limits stray’d,  
“ He drives his flock to pick the scanty blade,  
“ Those fenceless fields the sons of wealth deride,  
“ And e’en the bare-worn common is deny’d.”

MRS. B.

You should recollect that we do not admit poets to be very good authority in political economy. If, instead of feeding a few lean cattle, a common, by being inclosed, will fatten a much greater number of fine cattle, you must allow that the quantity of subsistence will be increased, and the poor, though in a less direct manner, will fare the better for it. Labourers are required to inclose and cultivate those commons, the neighbouring cottagers are employed for that purpose, and this additional demand for labour turns to their immediate advantage. They not only receive an indemnity for their loss of right of common, but they find purchasers for the cattle they can no longer maintain, in the proprietors of the new inclosures.

When Finchley Common was inclosed, it was

divided amongst the inhabitants of that parish; and the cottagers and little shopkeepers sold the small slips of land which fell to their share to men of greater property, who thus became possessed of a sufficient quantity to make it answer to them to inclose and cultivate it; and the poorer classes were amply remunerated for their loss of commonage by the sale of their respective lots.

CAROLINE.

But if we have it not in our power to provide for a redundant population by the cultivation of our waste lands, what objection is there to sending those who cannot find employment at home, to seek a maintenance in countries where it is more easily obtained, where there is a greater demand for labour? Or why should they not found new colonies in the yet unsettled parts of America?

MRS. B.

Emigration is undoubtedly a resource for an overstocked population; but one that is adopted in general with great reluctance by individuals, and is commonly discouraged by governments, from a mistaken apprehension of its diminishing the strength of the country.

CAROLINE.

It might be wrong to encourage emigration to a



very great extent ; I meant only to provide abroad for those whom we cannot maintain at home.

MRS. B.

Under an equitable government there is little danger of emigration ever exceeding that point. The attachment to our native land is naturally so strong, and there are so many ties of kindred and association to break through before we can quit it, that no slight motive will induce a man to expatriate himself. An author deeply versed in the knowledge of the human mind says, “ *La seule bonne loi contre les emigrations, est celle que la nature a gravé dans nos cœurs.*” On this subject I am very willing to quote the *Deserted Village*:—

“ Good heaven ! what sorrows gloom’d that parting day  
“ That call’d them from their native walks away !”

Besides, the difficulties with which a colony of emigrants have to struggle before they can effect a settlement, and the hardships they must undergo until they have raised food for their subsistence, are so discouraging, that no motive less strong than that of necessity is likely to induce them to settle in an uncultivated land.

Some capital, too, is required for this as well as for all undertakings; the colonists must be provided with implements of husbandry and of art and supplied with food and clothing until they shall have

succeeded in producing such necessaries for themselves.

Were emigration therefore encouraged, instead of being checked, scarcely any would abandon their country but those who could not find a maintenance in it. But should emigration ever become so great as to leave the means of subsistence easy and plentiful to those who remain, it would naturally cease, and the facility of rearing children, and maintaining families, would soon fill the vacancy in population.

There are, it is true, some emigrations which are extremely detrimental to the wealth and prosperity of a country; these, however, are not occasioned by poverty, but result from the severity and hardships imposed by arbitrary governments on particular classes of men. Want of toleration in religion has caused the most considerable and numerous emigrations of this description. Such was that of the Huguenots from France at the revocation of the edict of Nantz. They were a skilful and industrious people, who carried their arts and manufactures into Germany, Prussia, Holland, and England, and deprived France of some of her most valuable subjects. Spain has never recovered the blow which her industry received by the expulsion of the Moors, under Ferdinand and Isabella; not all the wealth of America has repaid her for this loss.

But to return to the population of England: the more we find ourselves unable to provide for an overgrown population, the more desirous we should be to avail ourselves of those means which tend to prevent the evil; — such, for instance, as a general diffusion of knowledge, which would excite greater attention in the lower classes to their future interests.

CAROLINE.

Surely you would not teach political economy to the labouring classes, Mrs. B.?

MRS. B.

No; but I would endeavour to give the rising generation such an education as would render them not only moral and religious, but industrious, frugal, and provident. In proportion as the mind is informed, we are able to calculate the consequences of our actions: it is the infant and the savage who live only for the present moment; those whom instruction has taught to think, reflect upon the past and look forward to the future. Education gives rise to prudence, not only by enlarging our understandings, but by softening our feelings, by humanising the heart, and promoting amiable affections. The rude and inconsiderate peasant marries without either foreseeing or caring for the miseries he may entail on his wife and children; but he who has been taught to value the comforts and decencies

of life, will not heedlessly involve himself and all that is dear to him in poverty, and its long train of miseries.

CAROLINE.

I am very happy to hear that you think instruction may produce this desirable end, since the zeal for the education of the poor that has been displayed of late years gives every prospect of success; and in a few years more, it may perhaps be impossible to meet with a child who cannot read and write.

MRS. B.

The highest advantages, both religious, moral, and political, may be expected to result from this general ardour for the instruction of the poor. No great or decided improvement can be effected in the manners of the people but by the education of the rising generation. It is difficult, if not impossible, to change the habits of men whose characters are formed and settled; the prejudices of ignorance that have grown up with us, will not yield to new impressions; whilst youth and innocence may be moulded into any form you choose to give them. This has been remarkably well expressed in a foreign periodical work.\* “*Tout est lié dans les dispositions morales et dans les habitudes de l’homme. Un travail qui met de l’ordre*

\* La Bibliotheque Universelle.

“ dans les idées, prépare à l’ordre dans la con-  
 “ duite. L’exercice de l’attention la fortifie, et  
 “ par elle le jugement et la mémoire, les deux  
 “ facultés les plus usuelles dans les affaires de la  
 “ vie. L’instruction religieuse et morale infusées  
 “ dans l’esprit et dans le cœur des enfans, à mesure  
 “ que les notions élémentaires des lettres leur  
 “ deviennent familières ; la discipline et la règle  
 “ qu’il est facile d’introduire dans les écoles, les  
 “ façonnent aux devoirs dont l’accomplissement  
 “ assure le maintien de l’ordre social, en même  
 “ temps que le bonheur des individus qui s’y  
 “ soumettent. Des hommes élevés de cette ma-  
 “ nière sont non-seulement plus intelligens, plus  
 “ aptes à saisir et appliquer les idées utiles, plus  
 “ économes, plus laborieux, que ceux qui sont  
 “ demeurés ignorans ; mais ils sont aussi plus  
 “ modérés, plus patients, plus sages, plus justes.  
 “ Tous les rapports, dans l’intérieur des familles,  
 “ en ont plus de douceur et de force ; l’influence  
 “ des parens est plus marquée et plus durable ;  
 “ le loisir n’est point accompagné des inconvé-  
 “ niens qu’il a pour les hommes illitrés ; les re-  
 “ lations de voisinage sont signalées par plus  
 “ d’égards, et celles de l’intérêt par plus d’équité.”

But independently of schools, and the various  
 institutions for the education of youth, there is an  
 establishment among the lower classes which is pe-  
 culiarly calculated to inculcate lessons of prudence

and economy. I mean the Benefit Clubs, or Friendly Societies; the members of which, by contributing a small stipend monthly, accumulate a fund which furnishes them relief and aid in times of sickness or distress. These associations have spread throughout the country, and their good effects are rendered evident by comparing the condition of such of the labouring classes as belong to them, with those of the same district who have no resource in times of distress, but parochial relief or private charity. The former are comparatively cleanly, industrious, sober, frugal, respecting themselves, and respected by others; depending in times of casual sickness or accident on funds created by their own industry, they maintain an honourable pride and independence of character: whilst the latter, in a season of distress, become a prey to dirt and wretchedness; and being dissatisfied with the scantiness of parish-relief, they are often driven to the commission of crimes. It is above a century since these clubs were first instituted; they received encouragement both from government and individuals, and have spread throughout the country. I dare say that your prudent gardener Thomas is a member of one of them.

CAROLINE.

Yes; and he belongs to one which can boast of peculiar advantages, as most of the gentlemen in

## ADoption OF THE POOR.

~~A gentleman~~ subscribe to it; in order, by in-  
creasing the fund, and consequently the amount of  
a ~~gift~~ which the distressed members can re-  
ceive to encourage the poor to belong to it.

MRS. B.

That is an excellent mode of bestowing charity, for you are not only sure that you relieve the necessitous, but also the industrious poor. A similar plan has been adopted, within these few years, in a village in the neighbourhood of London, and has been attended with the greatest success. Various schemes had been devised by the charitable inhabitants of this village to relieve the necessities of their poor, and so much was done for them by the opulent, that they found little need to exert their own industry; whilst the poor in the neighbouring parishes, attracted by the munificence of the charitable donations, flocked to the place; so that, notwithstanding all their bounty, the rich still found themselves surrounded by objects of penury and distress. Convinced at length that they created as much poverty as they relieved, they came to a resolution of completely changing their system. They established benefit clubs; and the sums which they before gave away in alms were now subscribed to these societies, so as to afford very ample relief to its members in cases of distress. The consequence was, that the idle poor abandoned the place, and the

industrious poor were so well provided for, that the village has assumed quite a new aspect, and penury and want are scarcely any more to be seen.

But the institution which, of all others, has most essentially contributed to the improvement of the condition of the poor, is that of the *Savings Banks*. Scotland has the glory of having first established an institution, the merits of which are so universally acknowledged, that within a few years it has spread throughout the civilised world. “The object of this institution,” says the *Edinburgh Review*, No. 49., “is to open to the lower orders a place of deposit for their small savings, with the allowance of a reasonable monthly interest, and with full liberty of withdrawing their money, at any time, either in whole or in part,—an accommodation which it is impracticable for the ordinary banks to furnish.”

These institutions, variously modified, according to the circumstances and localities of the different countries in which they are established, afford the greatest encouragement to industry, by securing the property of the labouring poor. How frequently it happens that an industrious man, after having toiled to accumulate a small sum, is tempted to lay it out in a lottery ticket, is inveigled by sharpers to a gambling table, or induced by adventurers to engage in some ill-judged and hazardous speculation; to lend it to a distressed or a treacherous friend, —



not to mention the risk of its being lost or stolen. But now that Savings Banks are established in almost every district in England, where the poor may without difficulty or trouble deposit the trifle they can spare from their earnings, and where, as an additional inducement, some interest is allowed them for their money, all this mischief may be avoided, and we may hope that the influence of prudential habits will help to raise the poor above the degrading resource of parochial assistance, and prepare the way for the abolition of the poor-rate, a tax which falls so heavily on the middling classes of people, and which is said to give rise to still more poverty than it relieves.

CAROLINE.

I cannot understand that.

MRS. B.

The certainty that the parish is bound to attend to their wants, renders the poor less apprehensive of indigence than if they were convinced that they must suffer all the wretchedness it entails. When a young man marries without having the means of supporting his family by his labour, and without having made some little provision against accidents or sickness, he depends upon the parish as a never-failing resource. A profligate man knows, that if he spend his wages at the public-house instead of providing for his family, his wife and children can

at worst but go to the poor-house. Parish-relief thus becomes the very cause of the mischief which it professes to remedy.

CAROLINE.

It appears to me to encourage the worst species of poverty, that arising from idleness and ill conduct.

MRS. B.

The greatest evil that results from this provision for the poor is, that by encroaching on the funds destined for the maintenance of labourers, it diminishes the demand for labour, and consequently lowers wages. Whilst, therefore, on the one hand the poor-rate raises up a population which requires work to maintain it, on the other, it curtails the means by which it is employed. The poor-rate bestows in the form of alms, and but too frequently on the idle and profligate, that wealth which should be the reward of active industry; if the amount of the poor-rate were added to the circulating capital of the country, the independent labourer might earn a better livelihood for himself and his family than he can now do; and, without the degrading resource of parish relief, might lay by a portion to provide for sickness and old age.

When it was once proposed to establish a poor's rate in France, the committee of mendicity, in rejecting it, thus expressed themselves on that of England:—

“ Cet exemple est une grande et importante leçon  
 “ pour nous, car independamment des vices qu’elle  
 “ nous présente et d’une dépense monstrueuse, et  
 “ d’un encouragement nécessaire à la fainéantise,  
 “ elle nous découvre la plaie politique de l’Angle-  
 “ terre la plus dévorante, qu’il est également dan-  
 “ gereux pour sa tranquillité, et son bonheur, de  
 “ détruire ou de laisser subsister.”

CAROLINE.

But what is to be done ; the poor cannot be allowed to starve, even when idle and vicious ?

MRS. B.

Certainly not ; and besides, the wife and chil-  
 dren of a profligate man are often the innocent  
 victims of his misconduct. Then there are fre-  
 quently cases of casual distress, which no prudence  
 could foresee or guard against ; under these cir-  
 cumstances, the poor-rate could not be abolished  
 without occasioning the most cruel distress. I  
 know therefore of no other remedy to this evil  
 than the slow and gradual effect of education. By  
 enlightening the minds of the lower classes their  
 moral habits are improved, and they rise above  
 that state of degradation in which all feelings of  
 dignity and independence are extinguished.

CAROLINE.

But, alas ! how many years will elapse before

these happy results can take place! I am impatient that benefits should be immediately and universally diffused; their progress is in general so slow and partial, that there is but a small chance of our living to see their effects.

MRS. B.

There is some gratification in looking forward to an improved state of society, even if we should not live to witness it.

CAROLINE.

Since it is so little in our power to accelerate its progress, we must endeavour to be contented with the prospect of improvement: but I confess that I cannot help regretting the want of sovereign power to forward measures so conducive to the happiness of mankind.

MRS. B.

You might possibly fail in your projects by attempting too much. The Emperor Joseph II. endeavoured at once to transform a bad government into a good one, and by adopting arbitrary and violent measures to accomplish his purpose, without paying any regard to the habits and manners, the prejudices and ignorance of his subjects, created ill-will and opposition, instead of co-operation; and ended by leaving them but little more advanced than he found them. I cannot too often

repeat to you, that gradual improvement is always preferable, and more likely to be permanent than that which is effected by sudden revolution.

But of all modes of bestowing charity, that of indiscriminate alms is the most injudicious. It encourages both idleness and imposition, and gives the bread which should feed the industrious poor to the indolent and profligate. By affording certain support for beggars, it trains up people to those wretched means of subsistence as regularly as men are brought up to any respectable branch of industry. This is more especially notorious in Catholic countries, where alms-giving is universally considered as a religious duty; and particularly in those towns in which richly endowed convents and religious establishments dispense large and indiscriminate donations.

Townsend, in his Travels in Spain, tells us, that  
 “ The Archbishop of Grenada once had the cu-  
 “ riosity to count the number of beggars to whom  
 “ he daily distributes bread at his doors. He  
 “ found the men 2000, the women 3024, but at  
 “ another time the women were 4000.

“ Leon, destitute of commerce, is supported by  
 “ the church. Beggars abound in every street, all  
 “ fed by the convents and at the bishop’s palace.  
 “ Here they get their breakfast, there they dine.  
 “ Beside food at St. Marca’s, they receive every  
 “ other day, the men a farthing, the women and

“ children half as much. On this provision they  
 “ live, they marry, and they perpetuate a miserable  
 “ race. Were it possible to banish poverty and  
 “ wretchedness by any other means than by in-  
 “ dustry and unremitted application, benevolence  
 “ might safely be permitted to stretch forth the  
 “ hand, and without distinction to clothe the naked,  
 “ feed the hungry, give drink to the thirsty, and  
 “ furnish habitations to the desolate. But the  
 “ misfortune is, that undistinguished benevolence  
 “ offers a premium to indolence, prodigality, and  
 “ vice.”

CAROLINE.

All this is very true : but you must allow that it  
 is extremely painful to pass, so frequently as we do,  
 objects of distress in the streets, without affording  
 them some trifling assistance.

MRS. B.

I cannot blame any one for indulging feelings  
 of humanity : to pity and relieve the sufferings of  
 our fellow-creatures is one of the first lessons  
 which nature teaches us ; but our actions should  
 be regulated by good sense, not blindly directed  
 by undistinguishing compassion. We should cer-  
 tainly consider it as a duty to ascertain whether the  
 object whom we relieve is in real want, and we  
 should proportion our charity, not only to his dis-  
 tress, but also to his merits. We ought to do much

more for an industrious family, whom unforeseen or unavoidable accidents have reduced to poverty, than for one who has brought on distress through want of a well-regulated conduct. When we relieve objects of the latter description, it would be well at the same time to bestow a trifling reward on some individual among the labouring classes of the neighbourhood distinguished for his industry and good conduct. This would counteract the pernicious effect which cannot fail to be produced by assisting the indolent, whilst we suffer the industrious to remain without reward,

CAROLINE.

But the advantages and comforts derived from industry constitute its natural recompence, and it seems to require no other reward.

MRS. B.

Nor would it, if a similar result could not be obtained without effort; but when a hard-working labourer observes that the family of his idle neighbour is as well provided for as his own — that the hand of charity supplies them with what he earns by the sweat of his brow — such reflections are apt to produce discontent, and tend to check his industry. While, therefore, we tacitly encourage idleness by relieving the distress it produces, we at the same time discourage that laborious industry

which passes unnoticed. The value of pecuniary rewards is increased by their being bestowed as marks of approbation; so far from exciting a sense of humiliating dependance, they produce a feeling of a very opposite nature, which raises and improves the character — a consciousness of merit seen and approved by those to whom the poor look up. Such sentiments soften whilst they invigorate the labours of the industrious. Thus if help for the distressed, and rewards for the meritorious poor were to go hand in hand, the one would do as much towards the prevention of poverty as the other towards relieving it.

## CAROLINE.

I had an opportunity last summer of witnessing a mode of improving the condition of the labouring poor, in which the system of rewards is introduced with the happiest effect. An extensive piece of ground has been laid out in gardens by a great landed proprietor in Hertfordshire, for such of his labourers as have none attached to their cottages. He lets the ground to them at the low rate of sixpence a-year each. These gardens are sufficiently large to provide an ample supply of common vegetables for the labourer's family, and to employ his leisure hours in its cultivation; but not so extensive as to tempt him to withdraw his attention from his daily labour, and render the produce an



article of sale. As a further means of exciting industry, the proprietor annually distributes three prizes as rewards to those whose gardens are found to be in the highest state of cultivation. This judicious mode of rewarding industry has been beneficial also in producing a spirit of emulation amongst the rival gardeners, whose grounds being separated only by paths, the comparative state of each is easily determined.

MRS. B.

This is indeed an excellent plan; the leisure hours which the labourers might probably have passed at the alehouse are occupied in raising an additional stock of wholesome food, and the money which would have been spent in drinking is saved for a better purpose — it may form perhaps the beginning of a capital, and in process of time secure a little independence for himself and his family.

## CONVERSATION XI.

---

### ON REVENUE.

MODES OF EMPLOYING CAPITAL TO PRODUCE REVENUE. — WHICH OF THESE IS MOST ADVANTAGEOUS. — VARIES ACCORDING TO THE STATE OF THE COUNTRY. — GARNIER'S OBSERVATIONS ON THE EMPLOYMENT OF CAPITAL. — EQUALITY OF PROFITS AFFORDS A CRITERION OF THE DUE DISTRIBUTION OF CAPITAL. — NATURAL ARRANGEMENT OF THE DISTRIBUTION OF CAPITAL. — EQUALITY OF PROFITS IN AGRICULTURE, MANUFACTURES, AND TRADE. — WHY THOSE PROFITS APPEAR UNEQUAL.

---

MRS. B.

IN our last conversation we have in some measure digressed from our subject; but I trust that you have not forgotten all we have said upon the accumulation of capital. Let us now proceed to examine more specifically the various modes in which it may be employed in order to produce a revenue or income. Capital may be invested: —

In Agriculture,  
Mines,  
Fisheries,  
Manufactures, and  
Trade.

CAROLINE.

Of all these ways of employing capital, agriculture, no doubt, must be the most advantageous to the country, as it produces the first necessities of life.

MRS. B.

In these northern climates it is almost as essential to our existence to be clothed and lodged as to be fed; and manufactures are, you know, requisite for these purposes.

CAROLINE.

True; but then agriculture has also the advantage of furnishing the raw materials for manufactures; it is the earth which supplies the produce with which our cloaths are made and our houses built.

MRS. B.

Yet without manufactures these materials would not be produced; it is the demand of the manufacturer for such articles which causes them to be raised by the farmer; agriculture and manufactures thus re-act on each other to their mutual advantage.

CAROLINE.

It may be so ; but still it does not appear to me that they can be equally beneficial to the country. Manufactures do not, like agriculture, actually increase the produce of the earth ; they create nothing new, but merely put together under another form the materials with which they are supplied by agriculture.

MRS. B.

True : but by such operations they frequently increase the value of these materials an hundred fold. The powers of man in processes of art, are unquestionably inferior to those of nature, in the production of vegetation ; for its operations consist not merely in a new system of chemical or mechanical combinations, but in the formation of organised bodies, endowed with the principles of life and of reproduction. You are mistaken, however, if you suppose that, in agriculture, any more than in manufactures, a single new particle of matter is created ; it is merely by a new system of arrangements performed in that great laboratory of nature, the bosom of the earth, in a manner which eludes our observation, that the wonders of vegetation are developed.

CAROLINE.

But in agriculture nature facilitates the labours of man ; she seems to work together with the hus-

bandman; and provided that he but ploughs the field and sows the seed, she performs all the remainder of the task. It is nature that unfolds the germ, and raises up the plant out of the ground; she nourishes it with genial showers, she ripens it with sun-beams, and leaves the farmer little more to do than to gather in the fruits of her labours.

How different is the case in manufactures! *There* man must perform the whole of the work himself; and notwithstanding the aid he derives from his mechanical or chemical inventions, it is all the result of his own toil; whether it be the labour of the head or the hands, it is all art.

MRS. B.

We are accustomed to speak of art in opposition to nature, without considering that art itself is natural to man. A state of nature in the human species, is a course of progressive improvement. Man is endowed with the faculties of invention and contrivance, which give him a considerable degree of command over the powers of nature, and render them in a great measure subservient to his use. He studies the peculiar properties of bodies in order to turn them to his advantage; he observes that light bodies float on the surface of the water, and he builds himself a boat; he feels the strength of the wind, and he raises sails; he discovers the powers of the magnet, and he directs his course by

it to the most distant shores: but the water which supports the vessel, the wind which wafts it on, and the magnet which guides it, are all natural agents compelled by the art of man to serve his purposes.

We cannot, therefore, say that it is in agriculture alone that nature lends us her assistance. The miller is as much indebted to nature for grinding his corn as the farmer is for raising it. In manufactures her share of the labour is sometimes even more considerable than in agriculture. You may recollect our observing, that the effect of machinery in facilitating labour consists chiefly in availing ourselves of the powers of nature to perform the principal part of the work; and there are some chemical processes of art for which we seem almost wholly indebted to nature. In bleaching, it is the air and light which perform the entire process; in the preparation of fermented liquors, we are ignorant even of the means which nature employs to accomplish this wonderful operation. In short, it would be difficult to point out any species of labour in which nature did not perform a share of the task.

CAROLINE.

That is very true; and it requires only a little reflection to discover how much we owe to her assistance in every work of art. We could not make a watch without the property of elasticity

natural to steel, which enables us to construct a spring; nor could the spring be fabricated without the natural agency of fire, rendered subservient to art.

But, Mrs. B., in agriculture we avail ourselves of machinery as well as of those secret operations of nature which produce vegetation.

MRS. B.

Undoubtedly we do; for every tool which facilitates manual labour is a machine — the spade and hoe, which save us the trouble of scratching up the earth with our hands — the plough and harrow, which still more facilitate the process — the flail, which prevents the necessity of rubbing out the corn — and the threshing-machine, which again diminishes the labour. Machinery is, however, not susceptible of being applied to rural occupations with the same degree of perfection as to the arts, because the processes of agriculture are extremely diversified, carried on over an extensive space, and dependant to a very considerable degree on the vicissitudes of the seasons, over which we have no control.

Agriculture, manufactures, and commerce, are all essential to the wellbeing of a country; and the question is not whether an exclusive preference should be given to any one of these branches of industry, but what are the proportions which they

should bear to each other, in order to conduce most to the prosperity of the community.

CAROLINE.

That is all I ask. I never imagined that every other interest should be sacrificed to that of agriculture; but I feel persuaded that in this country at least, trade and manufactures meet with greater encouragement than agriculture.

MRS. B.

That is a point on which I cannot pretend to decide; and when you are a little better acquainted with the subject, you will be more aware of its difficulties.

CAROLINE.

But surely political economists ought to know in what proportions the capital of a country should be distributed among these different branches of industry?

MRS. B.

It is not easily ascertained; because these proportions vary exceedingly in different countries, according to their local situation or peculiar circumstances. In America, for instance, or any new country in which land is cheap, population but thinly scattered, and capital scarce, the prevailing branch of industry will be agriculture. For in such countries, when a labourer accumulates a little



money, which (where wages are so high) he is soon enabled to do, he is immediately tempted by the cheapness of land, to lay it out in a farm; and though the wealth of the Americans is so rapidly increasing, they have hitherto found it more advantageous to import the greater part of their manufactured goods, than to establish manufactures at home, a circumstance not so much to be ascribed to a deficiency of capital, as to their having a more profitable use for it.

CAROLINE.

And in England, where the population is abundant, and land comparatively scarce, we must find it advantageous to take their corn in exchange for our manufactures.

MRS. B.

No doubt; if old countries were not to purchase elsewhere some part of the agricultural produce they consume, new countries would not raise more than they required for their own consumption, for want of a foreign market to dispose of it.

In this country, where land is dear, if a labourer make a little money, he never thinks of purchasing land; he cannot even afford to rent a farm; but he may set up a shop, or invest his capital in a manufacture.

There are other circumstances which affect the

destination of capital; such as the local situation of a country: if it abound with rivers and sea-ports, as is the case with England, so great a facility for the disposal of its manufactures in foreign parts will render that branch peculiarly advantageous.

CAROLINE.

So then if agriculture suits one country best, manufactures are more profitable to another, and thus they mutually accommodate each other?

MRS. B.

Exactly. If in England the proportion of capital employed in manufactures be more than is requisite for our own use, it is because we find our advantage in supplying other countries with manufactures in exchange for their produce, and that advantage arises from our being able to import it cheaper than we could produce it at home. Agriculture thus leads to manufactures and trade, as youth leads to manhood; the progress of the former is the most rapid, the latter adds the vigour and stability of mature growth. Garnier, in his Introduction to his French edition of Adam Smith's Essay, remarks on this subject, that, —

“ It is almost in every instance an idle refinement to distinguish between the labour of those  
“ employed in agriculture, and those employed

“ in manufactures and commerce ; for wealth is  
“ necessarily the result of both descriptions of la-  
“ bour, and consumption can no more take place  
“ independently of the one than of the other. It  
“ is by their simultaneous concurrence that any  
“ thing becomes consumable, and of course that  
“ it comes to constitute wealth. The materials of  
“ all wealth originate in the bosom of the earth,  
“ but it is only by the aid of labour that they can  
“ ever truly constitute wealth ; it is industry and  
“ labour which modify, divide, and combine the  
“ various productions of the soil, so as to render  
“ them fit for consumption.”

CAROLINE.

But, Mrs. B., though political economists cannot specify the proportion of capital which should be employed in these several branches of industry, have they no means of judging whether it is actually distributed in that proportion which is most conducive to the welfare of a country ? Men follow their own taste and inclination in the employment of their capital, and I fear the public benefit has very little weight in the scale.

MRS. B.

Fortunately there is a better guide than mere inclination to regulate our choice in the employ-

ment of capital, and *that is interest*. Men are induced to invest their capital in those branches of industry which yield the greatest profits; and the greatest profits are afforded by those employments of which the country is the most in need.

CAROLINE.

I do not exactly understand why there should be such a perfect coincidence between the wants of the public and the interest of the capitalist?

MRS. B.

The public are willing to give the highest price for things of which they stand in greatest need. Let us suppose there is a deficiency of clothing for the people; the competition to obtain a portion of it raises the price of clothing, and increases the profits of the manufacturer of clothes. What will follow? Men who are making smaller profits by the cultivation of land will transfer some of their capital to the more advantageous employment of manufacturing clothes; in consequence of this more clothes will be made, the deficiency will no longer exist, the eager competition to purchase them will subside, they will fall in price, and reduce the profits of the manufacturer to those of the agriculturist — or should these profits fall still lower, the farmer will take back the capital he had placed in manufactures to restore it to agriculture.

K

CAROLINE.

But a total change of business is not easily accomplished: the skill and experience acquired in one branch of industry might be quite useless in another; then the machinery of manufactures can no more be converted into implements of husbandry, than the latter could be rendered serviceable to the manufacturer. I should suppose that a farmer could not transfer his capital to manufactures or trade, nor a manufacturer or merchant to agriculture, but under disadvantages almost insuperable.

MRS. B.

Nor is this requisite in order to restore the level of profits when its variations are slight or temporary.

In all rich countries there are many persons who live on the income produced by lending their money at interest, and there are few merchants or manufacturers who limit their dealings to the employment of their own capital without having recourse to the loans of these monied men. When the profits of any particular branch of industry are found to be rising above the common level, those engaged in it are induced to borrow more in order to enlarge their dealings, whilst some other branch of industry which experiences a diminution of profit, contracts its dealings and discontinues borrowing.

Mr. Ricardo observes\*, that "When the demand  
 "for silks increases, and that for cloth diminishes,  
 "the clothier does not remove with his capital to  
 "the silk trade, but he dismisses some of his work-  
 "men, he discontinues his demand for the loan  
 "from bankers and monied men; while the case  
 "of the silk manufacturer is the reverse: he  
 "wishes to employ more workmen, and thus his  
 "motive for borrowing is increased: he borrows  
 "more, and thus capital is transferred from one  
 "employment to another, without the necessity  
 "of a manufacturer discontinuing his usual occu-  
 "pation."

CAROLINE.

Then the profits of agriculture and manufactures  
 will always be, or at least tend to be, upon  
 a footing of equality?

MRS. B.

Yes; *tend to be*: that is a very proper qualifica-  
 tion, for these changes are not produced on a sud-  
 den. The tendency to equalization of profits takes  
 place not only in agriculture and manufactures,  
 but in every other branch of industry. In a country  
 where capital is allowed to follow its natural course,  
 it will always flow into that channel which affords  
 the highest profits, till all employments of capital  
 are nearly upon the same level.

\* Principles of Political Economy, p. 84.

CAROLINE.

You say nearly, why not exactly the same?

MRS. B.

Because, generally speaking, agricultural pursuits are more congenial to the tastes of the majority of mankind than manufactures or commerce: and hence in countries where fertile land is to be obtained at an easy rate, a man no sooner acquires a little capital than he is desirous of purchasing land, and retiring even to remote and almost unpeopled districts, where he can live as the lord of his little domain; as is the case in America at present. Yet this preference will not lead beyond a certain limit; therefore it may be stated that the profits of different employments of capital are nearly upon a level.

CAROLINE.

How admirably nature makes all her arrangements! The more I learn of political economy, the more it appears to me, that the institution of laws which control her operations are generally productive of greater evil than good.

MRS. B.

That may frequently be the case, but *generally* is too comprehensive a term. Every law that is enacted infringes more or less upon the natural

order of things ; and yet I should not hesitate to say that the worst system of laws is preferable to no government at all. Art, we have observed, is natural to man ; it is the result of reason, and leads him onwards in the progressive path of improvement. Instead of being chained down like the brute creation by instinct, he is free to follow where inclination leads. But as soon as he enters into a state of society he feels the necessity of a control which nature has not imposed, and his reason enables him to devise one. He enacts laws which are more or less conducive to his good, in proportion as his rational faculties are developed and cultivated. Many of these laws, no doubt, are inimical to his welfare ; yet the balance upon the whole is in their favour ; the advantages resulting from the single law of the institution of property has conferred a greater benefit on mankind than all the evils which spring from the worst system of government.

CAROLINE.

But this level — this equality of profits to which you say every branch of industry naturally tends, cannot yet have taken place in England, since manufactures and trade are here allowed to yield greater profits than agriculture.

MRS. B.

You are mistaken in that opinion. It is true



that it is more common to see merchants and manufacturers accumulate large and rapid fortunes than farmers. They are a class who generally employ capital upon a more extensive scale, hence their riches make a greater show. Yet, upon the whole, trade and manufacturers do not yield greater profits than agriculture.

CAROLINE.

I cannot understand why the merchant and manufacturer should grow richer than the farmer unless they make larger profits.

MRS. B.

You must observe that though a farmer does not so frequently and rapidly amass wealth as a merchant, neither is he so often ruined. The risks a man encounters in trade are much greater than in farming. The merchant is liable to severe losses arising from contingencies in trade, such as war, changes of fashion, bad debts, which scarcely affect the farmer; he must therefore have a chance of making proportionally greater profits.

CAROLINE.

That is to say, that the chances of gain must balance the chances of loss?

MRS. B.

Yes; the merchant plays for a larger stake. If

therefore he be so skilful or so fortunate as to make more than his average share of gains, he will accumulate wealth with greater rapidity than a farmer; but should either a deficiency of talents or of fortunate circumstances occasion an uncommon share of losses, he may become a bankrupt.

CAROLINE.

But, Mrs. B., you should, on the other hand, consider that the farmer is exposed to the risk attending the uncertainty of the seasons, a cause which is continually operating, and over which we have no control.

MRS. B.

Yet, in these climates, the loss occasioned by such causes are seldom attended with ruinous consequences; for seasons which prove unfavourable to one kind of produce are often advantageous to another. And besides, the produce of agriculture consisting chiefly of the necessaries of life, the demand for it cannot well be diminished, and the price rises not only in proportion to the scarcity, but even higher; so that farmers frequently make the greatest gains in a bad harvest.

We may then conclude that though agriculture, manufactures, and trade, do upon the whole afford similar profits, these profits are, amongst farmers, more equally shared than amongst merchants and

manufacturers; some of whom amass immense wealth, whilst others become bankrupts.

The rate of profit, therefore, upon any employment of capital is, generally speaking, proportioned to the risks with which it is attended; but if calculated during a sufficient period of time, and upon a sufficient number of instances to afford an average, all these different modes of employing capital will be found to yield similar profits.

It is thus that the distribution of capital to the several branches of agriculture, manufactures, and trade, preserve a due equilibrium; which, though it may be accidentally disturbed, cannot, whilst allowed to pursue its natural course, be permanently deranged. If you are well convinced of this, you will never wish to interfere with the natural distribution of capital.

You must not, however, consider this general equality of profits as being fixed and invariable, even in countries where government does not interfere with the direction of capital. A variety of circumstances occasion a temporary derangement of it. The invention of any new branch of industry, or the improvement of an old one, will raise the profits of capital invested in it; but no sooner is this discovered, than others, who have capital that can be diverted to the new employment, engage in this advantageous concern, and competition reduces the profits to their due pro-

portion. The opening of a trade with a new country, or the breaking out of a war which impedes foreign commerce, will affect the profits of the merchant: but these accidents disturb the equal rate of profits, as the winds disturb the sea; and when they cease, it returns to its natural level.

## CONVERSATION XII.

---

### ON REVENUE DERIVED FROM PROPERTY IN LAND.

RENT THE EFFECT, NOT THE CAUSE, OF THE HIGH PRICE OF AGRICULTURAL PRODUCE.—CAUSES OF RENT; 1. THE FERTILITY OF THE EARTH; 2. DIVERSITY OF SOIL AND SITUATION REQUIRING DIFFERENT DEGREES OF EXPENSE TO RAISE SIMILAR PRODUCE.—ORIGIN OF RENT.—RENT INCREASES POSITIVELY IN A PROGRESSIVE COUNTRY, AND DIMINISHES RELATIVELY.—HIGH PRICE OF RAW PRODUCE NECESSARY TO PROPORTION THE DEMAND TO THE SUPPLY.

---

CAROLINE.

I HAVE been reflecting much upon the subject of revenue, Mrs. B.; but I cannot comprehend how farmers can afford to pay their rent if they do not make more than the usual profits of capital. I had imagined that they began by raising greater produce from the same capital than merchants or

manufacturers, but that the deduction of their rent eventually reduced their profits below those of other branches of industry.

MRS. B.

You were right in the first part of your conjecture; but how did you account for the folly of farmers in choosing a mode of employing their capital which, after payment of their rent, yielded them less than the usual rate of profit?

CAROLINE.

I believe that I did not consider that point. I had some vague idea of the superior security of landed property; and then I thought they might be influenced by the pleasures of a country life.

MRS. B.

Vague ideas will not enable us to trace inferences with accuracy, and to guard against them we should avoid the use of vague and indeterminate expressions. For instance—when you speak of the security of landed property being advantageous to a farmer, you do not consider that in the capacity of farmer a man possesses no landed property; he *rents* his farm; if he *purchases* it, he is a landed proprietor as well as a farmer. It is not therefore the security of landed property which is beneficial to a

farmer, but the security or small risk in the raising and disposing of his crops.

A farmer, when he reckons his profits, takes his rent into consideration; he calculates upon making so much by the produce of his farm as will enable him to pay his rent besides the usual profits of his capital; he must expect therefore to sell his crops so as to afford that profit, otherwise he would not engage in the concern. Farmers then really produce more by the cultivation of land than the usual rate of profit; but they are not greater gainers by it, because the surplus is paid to the landlord in the form of rent.

CAROLINE.

So then they are obliged to sell their produce at a higher price than they would otherwise do, in order to pay their rent; and every poor labourer who eats bread contributes towards the maintenance of an idle landlord?

MRS. B.

You may spare your censure, for rent does not increase the price of the produce of land. It is because agricultural produce sells for more than it cost to produce, that the farmer pays a rent. Rent is therefore the *effect* and not the *cause* of the high price of agricultural produce.

CAROLINE.

That is very extraordinary ! If landed proprietors exact a rent for their farms, how can farmers afford to pay it, unless they sell their crops at a higher price for that purpose ?

MRS. B.

A landlord cannot exact what a tenant is not willing to give ; the contract between them is voluntary on both sides. If the produce of the farm can be sold for such a price as will repay the farmer the usual rate of profit on the capital employed, and yet leave a surplus, farmers will be found who will willingly pay that surplus to the landlord for the use of his land.

CAROLINE.

But if the profits of agriculture are not the effect of rent, why are they not reduced by competition, and brought down to the usual rate of profit ? Why does not additional capital flow into that channel, and by increasing the supply of agricultural produce reduce its price ?

MRS. B.

Agriculture is not, like manufactures, susceptible of an unlimited augmentation of supply. If hats and shoes are scarce, and sell at extraordinarily high prices, a greater number of men will set up in the hat and shoe-making business, and by



increasing the quantity of those commodities reduce their price. But land being limited in extent, farmers cannot with equal facility increase the quantity of corn and cattle. It might however be done to a very considerable extent by improvements in husbandry, and bringing new lands into cultivation. But to whatever extent this were accomplished, it would not have the effect of permanently diminishing the price of those commodities which constitute the necessaries of life, because population would increase in the same proportion, and the additional quantity of subsistence would be required to maintain the additional number of people; so that there would remain (after allowing a short period for the increase of population) the same relative proportion between the supply and the demand of the necessaries of life, and, consequently, no permanent reduction of price would take place. The necessaries of life therefore differ in this respect from all other commodities; if hats or shoes increase in plenty they fall in price, but the necessaries of life have the peculiar property of creating a demand in proportion to the augmentation of the supply.

CAROLINE.

So that the country no sooner produces the bread than it produces the mouths to eat it.

MRS. B.

Such is the order of nature, when impatient man does not pervert her wise designs, and increase the population before an increased stock of provisions has been provided for its subsistence.

CAROLINE.

But what is it that makes agricultural produce sell at so high a price as to afford a rent besides the usual rate of profit? If it is not rent that occasions this high price, there must be some other cause for it.

MRS. B.

There are several circumstances which concur to raise and maintain the price of agricultural produce above its cost of production, and enable the farmer to pay rent. Its first source is what upon a superficial view would seem to have the effect of diminishing price; it is that invaluable quality with which Providence has blessed the earth, of bringing forth food in abundance; an abundance more than sufficient to maintain the people who cultivate it. For if those who occupy the land and raise the crops consumed the whole of them, there would be no surplus to sell at any price to others; and under such circumstances it would be impossible that the cultivator of the soil should pay rent. But the

natural fertility of the earth is such as to render almost all soils capable of yielding some surplus produce which remains after the farmer has defrayed all the expences of cultivation, including the profits of his capital. It is from this fund that he pays his rent. The quantity of this surplus produce varies extremely, according to the degree of fertility of the soil, and enables a farmer to pay a higher or a lower rent.

CAROLINE.

But, Mrs. B., in countries newly settled, where the greatest choice of fertile land is to be had, and where we are told that the harvests are so productive, as in many parts of America, no rent is paid?

MRS. B.

Wherever land is so plentiful that it may be cultivated by any one who takes possession of it, no man will pay a rent. But the cultivator, nevertheless, makes such a surplus produce as would enable him to pay rent. The only difference is, that instead of transferring it to a landlord, he keeps the whole himself. This is the reason that such rapid fortunes are made by new settlers, in a fine climate and a fertile soil.

It is the fertility of the soil, then, which *enables* the cultivator to pay a rent; but we must look for another cause which *induces* him to do so.

CAROLINE.

You speak as if it were left to his option, Mrs. B.; and if that were the case, I do not think that rent would ever be paid.

MRS. B.

We shall see presently how far you are right.—When a newly-settled country, such as the island in which we established a colony, augments its capital and population, the demand for food will increase, its price will rise, and more land will be taken into cultivation; and when all the most fertile neighbouring districts are occupied, soil of an inferior quality, or less advantageously situated, will be brought under tillage. Now, corn, or any agricultural produce, raised upon less fertile soils, will stand the farmer in a greater expense; more labour, more manure, and more attention will be required to raise a less abundant crop, and the cost of its production will, upon the whole, be greater.

CAROLINE.

The original settlers who had the first choice of the land have, then, an advantage over the others; they will make the greatest profits, and accumulate fortunes soonest. For the several crops, when brought to market, if of the same quality, will sell for the same price, whatever difference there may

have been in the cost of their production. Nay, it is even likely that the crops which cost the least to the farmer, may fetch the highest price ; for the most fertile soil will, in all probability, yield the finest produce.

MRS. B.

The first settlers have also another advantage ; they will have selected the most favourable situations as well as the most fruitful soil ; their fields will flourish on the borders of a navigable river, or surround the town which they have built ; affording them a resource both for a home and a foreign market. Whilst those who cultivate land in more remote parts must add all the charges of conveyance to the market where the produce is sold, or the port from whence it is exported. Let us suppose that the first settlers make 30 per cent., whilst the latter make only 25 per cent. of their capital. With the double advantage of the most fertile soil, and free from rent, it is no wonder if the first settlers should rapidly amass large capitals ; and it is not improbable that towards the decline of life they may be desirous of retiring from the fatigues of an active life, yet without wishing to sell their property. Under these circumstances, do you not think that they would readily find new settlers, who, rather than undertake to cultivate remote districts, of perhaps a still inferior soil, would pay

an annual sum for the use of their land, and become their tenants?

CAROLINE.

That is very true: it would answer to the newcomers to give the 5 per cent. which the first settlers make above the others, in consequence of having the most eligible land.

MRS. B.

This, then, is the origin of *Rent*. If the tenant pay a rent of 5 per cent., which is equal to one-sixth of what the proprietor made by cultivation, his profits will be reduced to 25 per cent., and will consequently be upon a level with those of the second settlers, who remain both proprietors and farmers; and thus the profits of agriculture are reduced from 30 to 25 per cent.

CAROLINE.

And those of other branches of industry will, I suppose, be reduced to the same rate, in order to maintain the level of equality of profits?

MRS. B.

No doubt. In what manner this is effected, I shall explain presently. When the profits of agriculture are 25 per cent., accumulation will still pro-

ceed with rapidity; and as the country grows rich and populous, the demand for corn will increase, and fresh land will be required to be brought into cultivation. The new land being either more remote, or of an inferior quality, will be cultivated under still greater disadvantages, and will not yield, let us suppose, above 20 per cent. profits. As soon as this happens, the second settlers will be able to obtain a rent for *their* land. For it will be as advantageous to a farmer to pay a rent of 5 per cent. for land, by the cultivation of which he makes 25 per cent., as to give nothing for the use of the land when he makes only 20 per cent. of his capital.

The general profits of capital are thus again reduced, from 25 to 20 per cent.

CAROLINE.

But do not those who first rented land continue making 25 per cent. by cultivating it?

MRS. B.

Only as long as their leases last; for as soon as their landlords find that the profits of capital are reduced to 20 per cent. they will not allow their tenants to make more, but require all the surplus profits above that sum to be paid them in the form of rent. Thus every fresh portion of land that is

taken into cultivation, either of inferior quality or less favourably situated, produces the double effect of creating additional rents on the land before cultivated, and of reducing the profits of capital.

CAROLINE.

That I perfectly understand; but how does it affect the price of agricultural produce—the high price of which, you say, is not owing to rent?

MRS. B.

In proportion as recourse is had to land of an inferior quality, to provide food for an increasing population, the difficulty and consequently the expense of producing it is increased, and no produce will be cultivated which will not sell for so much as its cost of production. Every new tract of inferior soil, therefore, brought under tillage, which raises rents and diminishes profits, will also raise the price of raw produce; for every quarter of corn, and loaf of bread, whether grown on the finest soils at the least cost of production, or yielded by land the most unfavourably circumstanced, will fetch the same price in the market.

CAROLINE.

That is undoubtedly true; we had already observed it: but it is curious enough to think that of two similar loaves of bread brought on table, the



cost of production of one of them may perhaps have been nearly twice as much as that of the other; and that one may have paid three-pence, whilst the other has only paid a half-penny towards the rent of the land on which it was raised.

The price of raw produce in general is then regulated by the expence of producing it on soils of the worst quality, or the most disadvantageously situated, which are incapable of paying a rent?

MRS. B.

Yes; provided you include in the cost of production the profits of the farmer; for though the worst soils cultivated may not afford a rent, they must bring the cultivator a profit; and if the produce of such land ceased to afford him profits, it would be thrown out of cultivation.

CAROLINE.

The high price of agricultural produce results, then, from the necessity of raising some portion of it at an additional expense on inferior soils?

MRS. B.

Yes; and as this has at the same time the effect of producing a rent on land of superior quality, we may define *rent* to be that part of the surplus produce of the land which remains after all the expenses of cultivation are deducted.

CAROLINE.

I think I understand it now perfectly; when population increases, the new people will eat as heartily and consume as much as the others, but the new land will not yield so much as that before cultivated; therefore, a greater quantity of land must be turned up to feed a given number of men, more labourers will be required to work it, and the cost of production being dearer, the price of its crops must rise. Under such disadvantages, I only wonder that the price of corn, and of raw produce, should not be higher than it is.

MRS. B.

The natural rise in the price of raw produce, owing to the cultivation of inferior soils, is in a great measure counterbalanced by other circumstances. If the productive powers of nature diminish as we proceed in the cultivation of inferior soils, those of art increase, with the progress of wealth. Every year improvements are made in agriculture, which augment the produce without proportionally increasing the expenses of cultivation, and enable corn to be brought cheaper to market. Besides, though land of an inferior quality is at first cultivated at an additional expense, it improves by tillage, so that the cost of production gradually diminishes; and by draining, manuring, and other ameliorating processes of agriculture, an ungrateful

soil is in the course of time not unfrequently rendered fertile. Disadvantages of situation are also remedied with the progress of society, the neighbourhood increases in population, new towns are built, and new markets opened; if therefore it were not indispensably necessary to continue bringing fresh land into cultivation to provide for an ever-growing population, corn would be produced at less expense, and would fall instead of rising in price.

CAROLINE.

But if all the surplus produce which remains after the expenses of production are deducted, go to the landlord in the form of rent, improvements in agriculture will not lower the price of raw produce, but will increase the rent.

MRS. B.

I beg your pardon; you have just observed that the price of raw produce in general is regulated by the expense of producing it on soils of the poorest quality, and the most disadvantageously situated; therefore, the more we diminish the expense of raising it on such soils, and the more we can remedy the disadvantages of situation, the lower we shall fix the standard price of raw produce. The cost of production of a loaf of bread raised on land of the lowest description is now one shilling; if by improvements in agricultural labour we could

reduce it to ten-pence, bread in general would sell at that price.

CAROLINE.

But, Mrs. B., if the profits of the farmer are gradually diminished by the natural increase of rent as inferior land is brought into cultivation, are they not, on the other hand, augmented by the enhanced price of agricultural produce? If the landlord require more rent, it is because the farmer sells his crops for more money. One of these effects, of increasing cultivation, appears exactly to counterbalance the other, and therefore one does not see why the farmer's profits should not remain stationary.

MRS. B.

It is perfectly true that the enhanced price of the farmer's crops remunerates him for the rise of rent. But it is not rent, it is the increased expense of production on poorer soils, which diminishes his profits. You may recollect my explaining to you how this occasioned a diminution of profits previous to the introduction of rent.

CAROLINE.

But this circumstance affects only the cultivator of new and inferior land. What is it that diminishes the profits of the cultivator of superior soils, if it is not the increase of rent?

MRS. B.

The bringing inferior soils into cultivation produces a general diminution of profits in all employments of capital, by producing a general rise of wages.

The wages of labour, we have observed, are always kept by the capitalist as low as the circumstances of the country will admit. If then agricultural produce, which constitutes the chief necessities of life, rises in price, from an increased cost of production; how are the labouring classes to subsist unless their wages rise also?

If the price of corn were enhanced in consequence of a bad harvest, the poor must necessarily submit to the evil of scarcity.— We have already observed, that in this case there is no resource; but such a calamity would be only of a temporary nature; whilst a rise in the price of corn, occasioned by increased cost of production, would be permanent. The capitalist who intends keeping up the same stock of labourers, must therefore consent to raise the general rate of wages; and not only farmers, but all persons employing labourers, will be under the same necessity; since labourers, of whatever description, are affected by the enhanced price of the necessities of life.

CAROLINE.

Is not this rise of wages analogous to that occasioned by accumulation of capital?

MRS. B.

Oh no; it is far from being attended with the same happy consequences, for it neither increases the demand for labour; nor does it improve the condition of the labouring classes. If the labourer receive more wages from his employer, it is not because capital abounds, but because his maintenance is dearer — dearer on account of the increased expense of producing it.

In order to impress this on your memory, and avoid confusion, I will enumerate the several causes which occasion ~~a rise of wages.~~

1st. Wages rise in consequence of accumulation of capital; labour is then well rewarded, the profits of capital are low, population increases, and the country is in a state of prosperity.

2dly. Wages rise in consequence of the increased cost of production of agricultural produce; then, though profits are diminished, labour is not better paid; it is the produce of the soil which is deficient, and there is less to divide between the labourer and his employer.

3dly. Wages sometimes rise in consequence of dearness of provisions occasioned by scarcity, the effect of which is merely to increase the price of the necessaries of life, so that the labourer suffers equally from the scarcity whether his wages rise or not.

CAROLINE.

I understand that perfectly well; but as I ad-

vance in the subject, fresh difficulties occur to me. So in ascending a mountain path, we expect on reaching the first eminence that all our difficulties will be over; but as we proceed, we find new summits rise in succession, till we almost despair of attaining the highest.

MRS. B.

If your metaphor alludes to perfect knowledge, it is an eminence we can never expect to attain; yet we are well rewarded for the difficulty of the ascent by the enlarged horizon, which, in proportion as we rise, expands before our view.

But what are the difficulties which just now impede your progress?

CAROLINE.

Should not the rise of price of agricultural produce precede, instead of follow, the cultivation of inferior soils; for when an increasing population augments the demand for food, their wants would not prove a sufficient inducement to the farmer to turn up new land, if the price of corn did not rise to tempt him to do so?

MRS. B.

That is actually the case: but this rise of corn is the effect of a deficiency of supply, and would be temporary; for corn would fall again as soon as

the additional crops were brought to market, if the expense of producing these crops were not greater than that of corn raised on land previously cultivated; but if more labour has been bestowed upon them, if they cost the farmer more, they must continue to sell higher. This, then, is the cause of the permanent continuation of high price of raw produce after the demand has been supplied. It proceeds from no deficiency of supply, but from an increase in the cost of production. The new corn will, however, fall in price, if its cost of production does not greatly exceed that of land previously cultivated; but the price can never fall so low as it was before the deficiency of supply, if the land on which it is raised be in any respect inferior to that which was previously cultivated.

CAROLINE.

Then do not wages as well as corn rise previously to the cultivation of inferior soils?

MRS. B.

They do; but this rise is in consequence of accumulation of capital, and takes place some time previous to the cultivation of inferior soils.

CAROLINE.

But since capital consists of food, of clothing, in a word of all that can supply the wants of man, if



it is increased before new land is brought into cultivation, it seems to supersede the necessity of that measure. Is it not rather inconsistent to say, that because the augmenting population is supplied by an increased capital, it requires a still further addition to it?

MRS. B.

Capital does not consist solely of the necessities of life, but includes also conveniences, comforts, and luxuries; capital may increase, therefore, without an augmentation of food. Mr. Ricardo has so clearly explained this, in his recent treatise on Political Economy, that I cannot do better than to read you the passage:—

“ When a high price of corn is the effect of an  
 “ increasing demand, it is always preceded by an  
 “ increase of wages; for demand cannot increase  
 “ without an increase of means in the people to pay  
 “ for that which they desire. An accumulation of  
 “ capital naturally produces an increased competi-  
 “ tion among the employers of labour, and a  
 “ consequent rise in its price.”

CAROLINE.

Yes, I recollect that was the case in our colony.

MRS. B. (*reading*).

“ The increased wages are not immediately  
 “ expended on food, but are first made to contri-

"bute to the other enjoyments of the labourer.  
 "His improved condition, however, induces and  
 "enables him to marry, and then the demand for  
 "food for the support of his family naturally  
 "supersedes that of those other enjoyments on  
 "which his wages were temporarily expended. Corn  
 "rises, then, because the demand for it increases,  
 "because there are those in the society who have  
 "improved means of paying for it; and the profits  
 "of the farmer will be raised above the general  
 "level of profits, till the requisite quantity of  
 "capital has been employed on its production.  
 "Whether, after the supply has taken place,  
 "corn shall again fall to its former price, or shall  
 "continue permanently higher, will depend on the  
 "quality of the land from which the increased  
 "quantity of corn has been supplied. If it be  
 "obtained from land of the same fertility as that  
 "which was last in cultivation, and with no greater  
 "cost of labour, the price will fall to its former  
 "state; if from poorer land, it will continue per-  
 "manently higher."

You see, therefore, that your observation, that  
 the rise of raw produce should precede the cultiva-  
 tion of inferior soils, is perfectly just. But you  
 must remember that the cause of the original rise  
 of price, and that which subsequently produces its  
 permanent continuation, are quite distinct; the  
 first ceases, and the second commences as soon as

the new crops are brought to market. Every time that inferior land is brought into culture, the price of raw produce, and consequently the profits of farming, must have previously risen. This occurs more or less at every progressive step made in agriculture. No new land *can* be cultivated till capital has accumulated to maintain and employ a greater number of labourers. And no new land *will* be cultivated till population has so far increased as to raise the price of corn, and make it answer to the agriculturist to break up new land for tillage.

CAROLINE.

Since my last observation has proved just, I will venture to make another. The rise of wages in consequence of accumulation of capital should be followed by a diminution of profits; this, therefore, would also precede the cultivation of inferior soils.

MRS. B.

And it does so. But the diminution of profits arising from abundance of capital and consequent increase of wages, is, like its cause, but temporary. It is soon followed by an increasing population and demand for food. The enhanced price of raw produce then repays the farmer the expense of high wages, and his profits are for a time even higher than those of other employments of capital.

CAROLINE.

Then, will not also the landlord come upon him for rent, previously to the cultivation of inferior soils?

MRS. B.

No, not any more than he would for having had a remarkably productive crop, his extraordinary profits being only temporary. If, as we have already observed, the increased demand for corn is supplied by land of as good quality as that previously cultivated, corn will fall to its former price, just as cloth or linen would first rise in price by an increasing demand, and fall again when that demand was supplied. But if the additional supply of cloth or linen could only be produced at a greater expense than before, those commodities could not then fall to their former price. An additional supply of corn is almost always produced under this disadvantage, being raised on land of inferior quality: corn therefore will remain permanently higher priced; and it is not till then that the landlord comes upon the cultivator of the better soil for rent.

Increase of capital could never produce a permanent fall of profits; for as soon as population increased to correspond with the capital, labour would fall, and profits be restored to their former rate. It is only when the cost of production of

food is increased, that the rise of wages and diminution of profits is permanent.

CAROLINE.

But, Mrs. B., is there any cultivated land in this country which can afford no rent? I know that gentlemen frequently farm their own estates, but it is with a view either to amusement or advantage, not because they could not obtain a rent for them.

MRS. B.

England is so far advanced in wealth and population, and has brought such numerous gradations of soil successively into cultivation, that I do not suppose there are now any considerable tracts of land under tillage which afford no rent; but in countries that have made less progress, such as Poland, Russia, and America, we know this to be the case; and in this country, as there is yet land which is suffered to lie waste, because at the present price of corn it is not worth cultivating independently of rent, it is not natural to suppose that from such very poor land we should suddenly rise to that of so good a quality that it will yield both rent and profit; there must undoubtedly be some of an intermediate nature, which will afford the usual rate of profit to the cultivator, but will produce no rent.

The inclosure of commons may afford us an

example of land of this quality ; they are, I believe, usually granted in lots to the parishioners, free of cost, who cultivate it on their own account ; but I do not think they could obtain a rent for it, unless they previously laid out capital upon it in fencing, ditching, draining, manuring, &c., which are part of the necessary expenses of cultivation, and which, if the proprietor undergoes for the tenant, he naturally requires to be repaid. For it must be understood, that by the rent of land I do not mean the total rent of a farm, comprehending, a dwelling-house, barns, stables, and farming-stock of various descriptions, but simply the use of the re-productive powers of the land.

CAROLINE.

Commons newly cultivated, in the course of time, will in their turn, I suppose, afford a rent ?

MRS. B.

No doubt they will, when their soil is improved, or that an increase of population shall have forced soils of still inferior quality into cultivation. But I conceive that a considerable quantity of land, for which rent is actually paid, may be incapable of affording it. A farm generally consists of a variety of soils ; one field may yield double or quadruple the produce that another will. On farms of poor land there are probably some fields that yield no

rent at all; that is to say, if taken separately, their produce would not more than repay the expenses of cultivation, and give the usual rate of profit, whilst other fields may be of so superior a quality, as to afford a greater proportion of rent than is paid per acre for the farm; an average is therefore taken, and the farmer pays more rent for the worst, and less for the best, than they would afford. The total rent of the farm includes also the rent of the various buildings and improvements made on the premises.

CAROLINE.

All this is perfectly clear; but I am not at all pleased to learn that as a country advances in the accumulation of wealth, *rent*, the portion of the idle landlord, augments, while *profits*, the portion of the industrious farmer, diminishes.

MRS. B.

These idle landlords, of whom you complain, neither lower the profits of capital nor raise the price of agricultural produce. Both these effects result from the diversity of soils successively brought into cultivation. Were rents, therefore, to be abolished, the only effect produced would be to enable farmers to live like gentlemen, as they would be enriched by that share of the produce of their farms which before fell to the lot of the landlord.

CAROLINE.

And would not that be a very desirable change? Is it not better that those who labour should grow rich, rather than those who live upon the fruits of the labours of others?

MRS. B.

The yeomanry are a class of men who cultivate their own property; and if you wish to encourage their industry, you must allow them to reap the full reward of their labours, — to accumulate wealth, and, when wealthy, to indulge in ease and repose, and to let their land to others, if they prefer this plan to that of cultivating it themselves. Were landed proprietors prohibited from letting their land when rich, they would nevertheless become idle, and would neglect the farming business; which being left to the care of servants, the cultivation would suffer, and the country, as well as the proprietor, be injured by the diminution of produce. In civilised countries, landed property has been obtained by industry, or by wealth, the fruits of industry, and should be secured in its full value, not only to the individual who has earned it, but to his heirs for ever.

CAROLINE.

But these wealthy men, who indulge in ease and repose, are no better members of society than the indolent savage.



MRS. B.

The love of ease, so commonly found among the rich and great, so far from being adverse to production or consumption, is quite the reverse; they are indolent, not from a want of taste for enjoyment, but because their wealth enables them to obtain these enjoyments through the agency of others.

Besides, though it is true that rents rise as a country advances in prosperity, this rise is not in proportion to the increasing produce of the soil, owing to the additional capital laid upon it. Rent formerly used to bring in to the landlord one-third of the produce of his land; it has since fallen to one-fourth, and has lately been estimated as low as one-fifth; so that the landlord, whilst he receives a higher rent, has a smaller share of the whole produce.

CAROLINE.

That is some consolation. But could no means be devised to abolish rents, and compel farmers to reduce in consequence the price of their produce, so that neither the landlord nor the farmer, but the public, should enjoy the benefit of the surplus produce which constitutes rent? Surely this would reduce the price of provisions, and of all agricultural produce.

MRS. B.

Since the price of raw produce is regulated by the expense of producing it on the poorest soils under cultivation, which can afford no rent, it could not fall in consequence of the abolition of rents. But supposing that it did so, what advantages would you expect to result from the reduction of prices so produced?

CAROLINE.

If food were cheaper, people would be able to consume more, and the poor would have plenty.

MRS. B.

How so? would the land be more productive in consequence of the abolition of rent? and if more should not be produced, how could the people consume more? An increased consumption without an increased supply will, as we have remarked on a former occasion, lead to a famine. The price of a quartern loaf is now one shilling; I conclude, therefore, that at that price the consumption of bread will be so proportioned to the quantity wanted, that the stock of wheat will last till the next harvest. The adoption of your compulsory measures might reduce the price of a quartern loaf to nine-pence; and every poor family being thus enabled to increase their consumption of

bread, the stock of wheat would not last out till the ensuing harvest. Then the following year, instead of raising more corn to make up the deficiency, the poorest land, which yields no rent, and but just affords the profits of capital at the present price of raw produce, would, by such a diminution of price be thrown out of cultivation; and the produce of the country would thus be considerably diminished.

CAROLINE.

Very true. I did not foresee that consequence. And a scarcity would perhaps raise the price of bread higher than it was before.

MRS. B.

How much would it be necessary for bread to rise in price in order to make the corn last till the next crops came in?

CAROLINE.

To the price at which it now sells, one shilling.

MRS. B.

We return then to the rent-price, though no rent is paid: you see, therefore, the fallacy of your proposed measures. The high price, of which you so bitterly complain, is the price necessary to proportion the consumption to the supply, so as to make it last till the ensuing harvest.

CAROLINE.

So far from being mortified, Mrs. B., I am delighted with my disappointment, as it has been the means of convincing me that if the poor are obliged to pay a high price for the necessaries of life, it is for their own benefit, as well as that of the mighty lords of the land; since it ensures them a uniform supply throughout the year.

MRS. B.

The labouring classes are besides in a great measure relieved from the burthen of high prices, as their wages rise in proportion; but observe, that this is the case only when high prices are occasioned by increased cost of production, not by scarcity. "A high price" (Mr. Ricardo observes), "is by no means incompatible with an abundant supply; the price is permanently high, not because the quantity is deficient, but because there has been an increased cost in producing it."

CAROLINE.

I the more willingly acquit rent of the accusation of creating high prices, since I see that there are two other sources from whence that evil may flow; the diversity of soil, and the necessity of proportioning the consumption to the supply.

MRS. B.

Since you acknowledge that high prices are ne-

cessary to prevent scarcity, you should, I think, no longer consider them as an evil.

An enquiry into the effects of human laws and institutions often discovers error; but whatever flows in the course of nature springs from a pure source, and the more accurately we examine it, the more admiration we feel for its Author,

Thus though rent cannot in itself be considered as an evil, since we have traced its cause to the natural fertility of the earth, and the diversity of soil, and have ascertained its effect to be to regulate the consumption of food to the supply; yet every artificial measure which tends to raise the price of agricultural produce, so as to enable the farmer to pay a higher rent, is certainly injurious. Therefore restrictions on the free importation of corn, or any other species of raw produce, which raises the price of those articles at home, is taking an additional sum out of the pockets of the consumer to put into that of the landlord. For rent may be considered as a necessary tax which the consumer pays to the landlord; the farmer is merely the vehicle of conveyance from the one to the other.

CAROLINE.

And has such a measure immediately the effect of raising rents?

MRS. B.

Not until the leases are expired; during their

existence the farmer enjoys all the adventitious gains, or suffers all the losses that may occur; but when his lease is renewed, it must correspond with the rate of profit, and rise or fall in proportion to the gains which the farmer expects to make, so as to give the whole of the surplus produce to the landlord, and leave only the usual profits of capital to the farmer. It may happen, indeed, either from ignorance or carelessness, and sometimes from motives of humanity, that the landlord does not exact all that the farmer can afford to pay; but these are accidental circumstances, and the whole of the surplus produce is considered as the fair and usual rent.

This theory of the origin and progress of rent, which I hope I have now explained to your satisfaction, was first developed by Mr. Malthus, and its consequences have since been more fully traced, and some important inferences deduced from it, in a late publication by Mr. Ricardo, some passages of which I have read to you.

CAROLINE.

I hope I have understood all you have said on the subject; but I beg that you will allow me to recapitulate the principal heads, in order to see if I am not mistaken. In proportion as capital accumulates, the demand for labour increases, which raises wages, improves the condition of the poor,

and enables them to rear a greater number of children — this increases the demand for subsistence, raises the price of corn temporarily, and induces the farmer to take more land into cultivation — if the new land be of inferior quality, the crops are produced at an increased expense, which raises the price of raw produce generally, and creates rent on superior soils. Corn, now become permanently dearer, causes a permanent rise of wages, and a corresponding fall of profits.

MRS. B.

Your recapitulation is very correct, and I am glad to find you have understood me so well; for the subject of rent having been but recently investigated with accuracy, it is neither so thoroughly developed, nor so well understood, as most other branches of political economy.

## CONVERSATION XIII.

---

### ON REVENUE DERIVED FROM THE CULTIVATION OF LAND.

TWO CAPITALS EMPLOYED ON LAND — TWO REVENUES DERIVED FROM IT. — OF THE CAPITAL AND PROFITS OF THE FARMER. — OF THE DURATION AND TERMS OF LEASES. — OF TITHES. — EXTRACT FROM PALEY. — OF PROPRIETORS FARMING THEIR OWN ESTATES. — EXTRACT FROM TOWNSEND'S TRAVELS. — FARMS HELD IN ADMINISTRATION. — ADVANTAGE OF AN OPULENT TENANTRY. — METAYER SYSTEM OF FARMING. — SMALL LANDED PROPERTIES. — EXTRACT FROM ARTHUR YOUNG'S TRAVELS. — DAIRY ESTABLISHMENTS IN SWITZERLAND. — SMALL FARMS. — SIZE OF FARMS IN BELGIUM AND TUSCANY. — OF MINES. — OF FISHERIES.

---

CAROLINE.

FROM the subject of our last conversation I have learnt that agriculture yields two distinct incomes: one to the proprietor, the other to the cultivator of the land.



MRS. B.

And it employs also two capitals to produce those incomes; the one to purchase, the other to cultivate the land. A man who lays out money in the purchase of land becomes a landed proprietor, and obtains a revenue in the form of rent. He who lays out capital in the cultivation of land becomes a farmer, and obtains a revenue in the form of produce.

CAROLINE.

I thought that the land was the capital from which the farmer derived his profits.

MRS. B.

You mistake: the land is the capital of its proprietor, and as such yields him a revenue; whatever the farmer obtains from it, is derived from cultivation; that is to say, from the labour and expense he bestows on the soil. The cultivation of land is to the farmer what the operation of machinery is to the manufacturer. A farmer requires capital to pay his labourers, and to purchase his farming-stock, such as cattle, waggons, ploughs, &c. It is the bare land and the farming buildings which he rents. The crops which are upon the ground when the agreement is made are paid for independently, and become the property of the

farmer. Unless therefore he has a capital to defray these expenses, he cannot take the lease of a farm.

CAROLINE.

I always supposed that the produce of a farm was sufficient to defray its expenses; nor can I understand how profits are to be derived from a farm, if the cultivation and rent cost more than its produce will repay.

MRS. B.

It is not so. The capital of the farmer is employed as the means of cultivating his farm; and when at the end of the year, after paying his rent, his labourers, and keeping his stock in repair, he finds himself in possession not only of his original capital, but also of a surplus or profit, it is a proof that the farm produces more than the cost of its rent and cultivation. The case is similar in all employment of capital. The manufacturer who lays it out in the purchase of raw materials, and in paying the labour which is afterwards expended on them; or the merchant whose capital is employed in the purchase of goods for sale, could not carry on their respective occupations without first laying out their capital: but it is returned to them, together with the profits that have accrued by its employment. Each of these occupations bring in

more than is laid out, but none of them could be carried on without a capital.

CAROLINE.

Oh yes ; I recollect the labourer produces for his employer more than he receives from him as wages, and this surplus is the source of his master's profit ; but if the farmer had not wherewithal to pay his labourers' wages, he could not set them to work.

It is then upon the capital which a farmer employs on his land, that he calculates his profits ?

MRS. B.

Yes. Let us suppose that a farmer employs a capital of the value of 3000*l*. on his farm : he may, possibly, after deducting the rent and the expenses of cultivation, make ten per cent. or 300*l*. profit.

CAROLINE.

That is to say, that at the end of the year he would find himself 300*l*. richer than he was before ?

MRS. B.

Provided that he had spent none of his gains during the course of the year. But as his family are commonly maintained by the produce of the farm, he will at the end of the year be actually richer or poorer according to the proportion which

his domestic expenses have borne to his gains. But these cannot be considered as a deduction from his profits, as the expense of the maintenance of his family must fall upon his revenue in whatever way it is obtained.

CAROLINE.

And what is the usual rent paid for such a farm?

MRS. B.

It depends in a great measure upon the extent and condition of the land. A considerable farm, in a good state of cultivation, and possessing the advantage of a fertile soil, may not require a capital of more than 3000*l.* to carry it on; whilst a farm of only half that extent, if in a bad condition, and with an ungrateful soil, may require as large a capital to be laid out on it. But a very different rent would be paid for these two farms.

CAROLINE.

The large productive farm will naturally pay a higher rent than the smaller ill-conditioned one?

MRS. B.

And the difference of rent will equalise the profits which a farmer would derive from employing the same quantity of capital on each of these farms. Taking an average of the state of culture, a farm which requires 4000*l.* capital may pay a rent of

M

about 200%, the share of the farmer being nearly double that of the landlord.

CAROLINE.

You said in our last conversation, that the rent of land had lately been estimated as low as  $\frac{1}{3}$ th of the produce. A farm, such as you have described, would therefore yield produce worth 1000%, in which case the profits of the farmer would be above three times as great as those of the landlord.

MRS. B.

You forget that from the total or gross produce must be deducted not only the rent, but also the expenses of cultivation; these are generally estimated at one-half of the produce, after deducting the rent; there will remain therefore 400%, which is 10 per cent. profit on the 4000% capital employed on the farm. If from this sum the farmer saves 50%, he may lay it out in the improvement of his land, which will render the produce more plentiful the following year; an advantage of which he will derive the full benefit, as his rent will remain the same to the end of the lease.

CAROLINE.

But on granting a new lease, the proprietor, I suppose, would expect a higher rent for a farm that had been thus improved?

MRS. B.

No doubt; it is therefore desirable that land should not be let on short leases, because farmers would have no inducement to improve the condition of their land without the prospect of reaping the benefit of it for some years to come.

CAROLINE.

But towards the end of the lease, this objection would remain in force?

MRS. B.

True: but to prevent this, farmers generally obtain a renewal of their leases some time before they are elapsed. Besides it would be contrary to the interest of the landlord to deal hardly with his tenants on such occasions, as it would discourage them from improving their farms; an advantage in which the landlord must eventually partake.

In Staffordshire, Nottinghamshire, and some other parts of the country, it is not customary to grant leases; the tenants hold their farms at the will of the landlord. There is, however, a sort of conventional agreement between the parties, that except in cases of misconduct, the farmer shall not be removed; nor have his rent raised during a certain period. Some people are of opinion that this mode of letting land is preferable to granting a

lease ; because they say the industry of the farmer is stimulated both by hope and fear ; the hope of profit from his labours, and the fear of being turned out should he neglect the improvement of his farm : but in arguing thus they do not consider that this fear must operate in two ways ; for in proportion to the improvement which the farmer makes, so is the temptation to the landlord, if he be needy or illiberal, to turn him out, or to exact an increase of rent. In short, there can be no greater check to industry than the insecurity of the profits it produces ; and how can a farmer feel his interests secure whilst he is dependent on the will of his landlord ?

CAROLINE.

Besides, though a farmer may repose great confidence in the character of the individual whose land he holds, the uncertainty of life renders him dependent also upon his heir, and this may perhaps be some wild extravagant youth, who, without regard to his ultimate interest, will exact the highest rents from his tenants.

MRS. B.

Security is, no doubt, the most important point for the encouragement of industry ; and the greatest, indeed the only encouragement which government can give to agriculture, is to secure to the farmer all the power over the soil that is necessary for its

perfect cultivation, and to ensure to him the profits of every improvement he may make. I will read you a passage from Paley on this subject: —

“ The principal expedient by which laws can  
 “ promote the encouragement of agriculture, is to  
 “ adjust the laws of property as nearly as possible  
 “ by the following rules: 1st, To give to the oc-  
 “ cupier all the power over the soil which is neces-  
 “ sary for its perfect cultivation. 2dly, To assign  
 “ the whole profit of every improvement to the  
 “ persons by whom it is carried on. Now it is  
 “ indifferent to the public in whose hand this power  
 “ of the land resides, if it be rightly used; it mat-  
 “ ters not to whom the land belongs if it be well  
 “ cultivated.

“ Agriculture is discouraged by every constitu-  
 “ tion of landed property which lets in those who  
 “ have no concern in the improvement to a parti-  
 “ cipation of the profit. This objection is appli-  
 “ cable to all such customs of manors as subject  
 “ the proprietor, upon the death of the lord or  
 “ tenant, or the alienation of the estate, to a fine  
 “ apportioned to the improved value of the land.  
 “ But of all institutions which are in this way  
 “ adverse to cultivation and improvement, none is  
 “ so noxious as that of tithes. When years perhaps  
 “ of care and toil have matured an improvement,  
 “ when the husbandman sees his new crops ripen-  
 “ ing to his industry, the moment he is ready to



“ put his sickle to the grain he finds himself compelled to divide his harvest with a stranger.  
 “ Tithes are a tax not only upon industry, which feeds mankind, but upon that species of exertion which it is the aim of all wise laws to cherish and promote.”

CAROLINE.

It is indeed much to be regretted that a provision for the clergy should not be raised in some other manner.

MRS. B.

Since all right of property is derived from legal institutions, the clergy have an equal right to their tithes as the landed proprietors to their estates; yet I believe that few of the clergy venture to levy tithes to the extent of their rights, for they cannot do it without incurring the ill-will and opposition of their parishioners. The system must therefore certainly be defective which appears to dispossess one man of the fruits of his industry, whilst it will not allow another to take, without exciting vexation and disturbance, that which the law has assigned to him as his property.

CAROLINE.

And this opposition of interests must be prejudicial both to religion and morals, by creating an endless source of contention between the clergy and their parishioners; — but why do you say

“appears to dispossess;” for surely nothing can be more certain than that the tithes really dispossess the cultivator of one tenth of his produce?

MRS. B.

It is the opinion of a political economist of great eminence, Mr. Ricardo, that the farmer is eventually remunerated for the expense of tithes.

CAROLINE.

Indeed! do tithes then fall upon the landlord? they appear to be very analogous to rent; and I suppose that, like rent, they may be considered as a portion of the surplus produce of the land?

MRS. B.

It is not so; because, whether a farm yield a surplus produce for rent or not, it is equally obliged to pay tithes. The farmer, therefore, in order to defray this expense, is compelled to sell his crops at an advanced price, and it is eventually the consumer who pays the tithes; whilst, if they were a portion of the surplus produce of the farm, the whole burden of them would, as you observe, fall on the landlord.

CAROLINE.

But, supposing that the consumer refused to pay the advanced price requisite to relieve the farmer from the burden of tithes, the landlord would be obliged to lower the rent for that purpose?

MRS. B.

Who, then, would pay the tithes on lands which afford no rent? They must fall on the cultivator; and as he cannot afford to pay them without enhancing the price of his crops for that purpose, he would no longer find it answer to cultivate soil of so poor a quality; he would throw up his farm, in consequence of which the supply of corn would be diminished, its price would rise, and the farmer would again find it expedient to resume the cultivation of his land: it is thus that the consumer is compelled to pay tithes, or any other arbitrary tax laid on the land.

CAROLINE.

That is certainly true with respect to land which pays no rent; but I cannot understand why tithes should not be deducted from the surplus produce, where the soil is of a nature to afford it.

MRS. B.

The price of raw produce, you must recollect, is regulated by the expense of producing it on soils of the worst quality under cultivation; tithes must increase that expense, and enhance generally the price of raw produce. The farmer being thus repaid by the consumers, the same surplus produce will remain to the landlord as previously to the introduction of tithes.

CAROLINE.

But if it is not the farmer who pays the tithes, why is he willing to give a higher rent for land tithe free?

MRS. B.

Because he has the advantage of selling his crops at the advanced price which tithes occasion, whether his land is tithe free or not; if he is exempted from this tax, therefore, it will increase the surplus produce which remains for the landlord after the expenses of cultivation are deducted. In Scotland, for example, where the tithes are very inconsiderable, the landlord receives a proportionally greater rent than in England. For the Scotch farmer is able to sell his corn as dear as the English farmer, and the difference goes to the landlord under the form of rent.

CAROLINE.

Farmers, I suppose, are not aware that the price of their crops is raised in consequence of the tithes, otherwise this tax would not produce so much discontent among them?

MRS. B.

Probably not. Tithes, therefore, do not constitute a portion of the surplus produce of the soil, they must be considered as part of the expenses

## 250 REVENUE FROM CULTIVATION OF LAND.

of cultivation; they add to the cost of production of the crops, and consequently raise the price of all raw produce. This, you know, is not the case with rent, which is the surplus produce of the land, after deducting the expenses of cultivation.

CAROLINE.

Since it is so desirable for the cultivator to have unlimited power over the soil, I should have thought that it would have been particularly advantageous for landed proprietors to cultivate their own estates, instead of letting them to farmers; and yet it is a common observation that gentlemen make the least profits by agriculture. This is the more unaccountable, because being both landlord and farmer, the proprietor must receive the two incomes comprised in the produce of the land, rent and profit.

MRS. B.

But recollect that he also employs two capitals, in order to make the two incomes; the one to purchase the land, the other to cultivate it. The reason why gentlemen who cultivate their own estates do not usually make profits equal to those of a common farmer, is either because they do not understand the business so well, or that they do not bestow the same care and attention upon it. The common farmer usually devotes the whole of

his time to his farm, either in the capacity of bailiff, or that of labourer; while the gentleman farmer never earns the wages of labour, and generally leaves the important office of bailiff to be performed by a substitute; therefore were the gentleman to raise as plentiful crops as the farmer, they would be produced at a more considerable expense, and his gains would be proportionally diminished. As to the value of the rent, it must be reckoned independently, as he receives it in his quality of landlord.

CAROLINE.

It would then probably increase the agricultural produce of the country, if gentlemen were always to let their land instead of farming it themselves.

MRS. B.

On the contrary, I believe it to be very desirable that some few gentlemen, in different parts of the country, should cultivate their own estates. Being generally men of greater information than common farmers, they are more willing to make experiments, and adopt any new mode in the various agricultural processes which may appear eligible. Besides, the land is frequently better improved in the hands of the proprietor than in those of a labouring farmer; as the proprietor has usually

the advantage of a larger capital to lay out on his land, and then he is not restrained by the apprehension that his rent will be ultimately raised in proportion to the additional value which he gives to the land.

Townsend, in his *Travels in Spain*, has made some very judicious observations on English gentlemen farmers.

“ By residing,” he says, “ on their own estates,  
 “ they not only spend money among their tenants,  
 “ which by its circulation sets every thing in mo-  
 “ tion, and becomes productive of new wealth, but  
 “ their amusement is to make improvements. By  
 “ planting, draining, and breaking up lands which  
 “ would have remained unprofitable, they try new  
 “ experiments, which their tenants could not af-  
 “ ford, and which, if successful, are soon adopted  
 “ by their neighbours. They introduce the best  
 “ breed of cattle, the best implements of husband-  
 “ ry, and the best mode of agriculture; they  
 “ excite emulation, they promote the mending of  
 “ the roads, and secure good police in the villages  
 “ around them. Being present, they prevent their  
 “ tenants from being plundered by their stewards.  
 “ they encourage those who are sober, diligent,  
 “ and skilful; and they get rid of those who would  
 “ impoverish their estates. Their farmers, too,  
 “ finding a ready market for the produce of the  
 “ soil, become rich, increase their stock, and by

“ their growing wealth make the land more productive than it was before.”

CAROLINE.

You have enumerated so many advantages on the opposite side of the question, that I begin to think that it would be more beneficial to the country that all landed proprietors should cultivate their own estates ; for though they might not be great gainers by it themselves, yet the country would derive all the advantage from the improvement of the soil, and the introduction of scientific agriculture.

MRS. B.

A few gentlemen farmers in each county will be sufficient for the latter purpose. Were it common for proprietors to farm their own estates, I am convinced that it would be extremely injurious to agricultural produce ; for no command of capital, no scientific knowledge, can, in a general point of view, compensate for the keen and vigilant eye of the industrious farmer, who sees that every thing is turned to the best account.

CAROLINE.

I should suggest as a medium between these two modes, that a landed proprietor should neither farm his estate, nor let it, but employ an agent to cultivate it for him, whose salary should be pro-



portioned to the produce which he raises on the land.

MRS. B.

Such, I believe, was the species of tenure by which farms were held by the vassals of the nobles when they were first emancipated from slavery, and that military services were no longer, as in feudal times, considered as a sufficient remuneration for the occupancy of land. To give the cultivator any interest in the produce he raises, acts certainly as a spur to his industry; but it is one much less powerful than the security and independence of the leasehold-farmer, who, after paying a stipulated rent, enjoys the whole advantage of the efforts of his industry.

Townsend informs us, that most of the great estates in Spain are held in administration, that is, cultivated by agents or stewards for the account of the proprietor; and it is principally to this cause that he attributes the low state of agriculture. "No country," he observes, "can suffer more than Spain for want of a rich tenantry, and perhaps none in this respect can rival England. We find universally that wealth produces wealth; but then to produce it from the earth, a due proportion of it must be in the pocket of the farmer. Many gentlemen among us, either for amusement, or with a view to gain, have given attention to agriculture, and have occupied much land; they

“ have produced luxuriant crops, and have intro-  
“ duced good husbandry ; but I apprehend few can  
“ boast of having made much profit, and most are  
“ ready to confess that they have suffered some  
“ loss. If, then, residing on their own estates,  
“ with all their attention, they are losers, how  
“ great would be the loss if in distant provinces  
“ they employed only stewards to plough, to sow,  
“ to sell, and to eat up the produce of their lands?”

There are, however, in warmer climates, some species of produce, which from their peculiar nature farmers would not venture to undertake to cultivate on their own account, and proprietors would be unwilling to trust entirely to their management. Such is the culture of the vine and the olive, plants which require the utmost care and attention during a number of years before they begin to yield any fruit, and farmers are seldom sufficiently opulent to engage in a species of husbandry the profits of which are so long protracted. On the other hand, as these plants may be very materially injured by being allowed to bear fruit either prematurely or too luxuriantly, and as the interest of the farmer looks rather to immediate than remote profits, it is not considered safe to trust such plantations entirely to his care. Vineyards and olive-grounds are therefore, I am informed, cultivated by the farmer in half account with the proprietor, who shares with him equally the expences and the profits. This is

called the *Métayer system* of cultivation: it was formerly very common on the Continent for all kinds of produce, and still prevails in Italy, where the land is so extremely subdivided, that the *Métayer* farmers, frequently subsisting upon half the produce of not more than five or six acres of land, are seldom superior in condition to our peasantry. In France and Switzerland this system of farming is confined almost exclusively to the culture of the vine and the olive. But how requisite soever the system may be for particular plantations, the usual mode in this country of granting leases, I conceive to be, not only most advantageous to the farmer, but ultimately so to the landed proprietor, who can procure the highest rent for the land best cultivated; and it is also most beneficial to the country by yielding the greatest produce. But in Spain this mode could not be adopted for want of an affluent tenantry. The wealth of the country is chiefly engrossed by the nobles and clergy; there is a total deficiency of yeomen who cultivate their own land; and the middling classes are few in number, and so destitute of capital that they are incapable of taking a lease of land.

## CAROLINE.

I often wish that the property of land was more subdivided in this country. How delightful it would be to see every cottage surrounded by a few acres;

belonging to the cottager, which would enable him to keep a cow, a few pigs, and partly at least to support his family on the produce of his little farm. Do you recollect Goldsmith's lines? —

“ A time there was, ere England's griefs began,  
 “ When every rood of ground maintain'd its man :  
     “ But now, alas ! . . . . .  
 “ Along the lawn where scatter'd hamlets rose,  
 “ Unwieldy wealth and cumb'rous pomp repose,  
 “ And every want to luxury allied.”

MRS. B.

I shall point out to you a passage in Arthur Young's *Travels* in France, in which this question is discussed.

CAROLINE *reads*.

“ I saw nothing respectable in small properties,  
 “ except most unremitting industry. Indeed it is  
 “ necessary to impress on the reader's mind that  
 “ though the husbandry I met with in a great  
 “ variety of instances was as bad as can well be  
 “ conceived, yet the industry of the possessors was  
 “ so conspicuous and meritorious that no com-  
 “ mendations would be too great for it. It was  
 “ sufficient to prove that property in land is the  
 “ most active instigator to severe and incessant  
 “ labour. And this truth is of such force and ex-  
 “ tent that I know no way so sure of carrying tillage

“ to a mountain-top as by permitting the adjoining  
 “ villagers to acquire it in property; in fact, we  
 “ see that in the mountains of Languedoc they  
 “ have conveyed earth in baskets on their backs to  
 “ form a soil where nature has denied it.”

MRS. B.

Land that is too poor to afford a rent, you will recollect, may still yield sufficiently to pay the proprietor for its cultivation; it is therefore the property of such soils alone which will ensure their being cultivated. — But go on.

CAROLINE *reads*.

“ But great inconveniency arises in small pro-  
 “ perties from the universal division which takes  
 “ place after the death of the proprietor. Thus I  
 “ have seen some farms which originally consisted  
 “ of 40 or 50 acres reduced to half an acre, with a  
 “ family as much attached to it as if it were an  
 “ hundred acres. The population flowing from  
 “ this extreme division is often but the multipliea-  
 “ tion of wretchedness. Men increase beyond the  
 “ demand of towns and manufactures, and the  
 “ consequence is distress, and numbers dying of  
 “ diseases arising from insufficient nourishment.  
 “ Hence small properties much divided form the  
 “ greatest source of misery that can be conceived.

“ In England small properties are exceedingly

“ rare ; our labouring poor are justly emulous of  
 “ being the proprietors of their cottages, and that  
 “ scrap of land which forms the garden ; but they  
 “ seldom think of buying land enough to employ  
 “ themselves. A man that has two or three  
 “ hundred pounds with us does not buy a field,  
 “ but stocks a farm. In every part of England in  
 “ which I have been, there is no comparison be-  
 “ tween the case of a day-labourer and of a very  
 “ little farmer : we have no people that fare so  
 “ ill and work so hard as the latter. No labour is  
 “ so wretchedly performed and so dear as that of  
 “ hired hands accustomed to work for themselves ;  
 “ there is a disgust and listlessness that cannot  
 “ escape an intelligent observer, and nothing but  
 “ real distress will drive such little proprietors to  
 “ work at all for others. Can any thing be appa-  
 “ rently so absurd as a strong hearty man walking  
 “ some miles and losing a day’s work in order to  
 “ sell a dozen of eggs or a chicken, the value of  
 “ which would not be equal to the labour of con-  
 “ veying it, were the people usefully employed ?”

CAROLINE.

This reminds me of a poor woman in Savoy,  
 who kept a few cows among the mountains two or  
 three leagues distant from Geneva. Having no  
 other market for her milk, she carried it regularly  
 every day to that town for sale ; thus the greater

part of her time was spent upon the road, whilst it might certainly have been much more profitably employed had she been dairy-maid to some considerable farmer, who, having milk enough to turn it to butter and cheese, could in that state send it wholesale to market.

MRS. B.

The inconvenience you allude to has of late years been obviated in many of the villages of Switzerland, especially in the neighbourhood of Geneva, by the introduction of a peculiar species of public dairy establishments, which, I understand, originated in the plains of Lombardy. To these dairies, called *Fruitières*, the farmers in the vicinity bring their daily stock of milk, which is converted into butter and cheese, and returned to them in that form, the establishment retaining only such a portion as is necessary to defray its expences.

There are also considerable dairy establishments in the Swiss mountains, but these are commonly private property; the proprietor of the mountain-pasture usually hiring cows of the neighbouring farmers, who are commonly repaid in the manufactured produce of the dairy.

Small landed properties are extremely common in Switzerland; and I confess that the observations I have made during a long residence in that country, have not led me to form the same conclusions

as Arthur Young. When a farm is insufficient for the maintenance of more than a single family, the law which enjoins an equal division of the property after the death of the father, among his children, is easily evaded; the children, instead of waiting for that event to parcel out the land into portions, which would be nearly without value from their minuteness, agree that one of the brothers shall succeed to the landed property, and pay to the other children an equivalent for their share; this is done either immediately on their coming to the inheritance, or by instalments, as circumstances will admit. In the meantime those who have thus sold their birth-right, learn some trade, or other mode of gaining a livelihood.

In the Canton of Berne it is usually the youngest son who remains at home with his father, and succeeds to the estate when it is too small to be divided.

There are also many districts in France, particularly in Burgundy, where farms of about ten acres are known to have existed to the same extent for above a century and a half; — the theorist, according to an apparently unanswerable calculation, would have reduced these farms to a few square yards during such a period of time; but human nature is very ingenious in devising methods for eluding or softening the effects of a law which has an unfavourable tendency.



CAROLINE.

I heard a gentleman who is recently returned from France say, that three servants, whom he had hired at Marseilles, had all been men of landed property; but that the portion of inheritance to each had been so small that they had disposed of it to other members of their families, in order to hire themselves as servants.

MRS. B.

When this or any other cause prevents the extreme partition of landed property, the principal objections to small properties are removed; and the disadvantage arising from deficiency of capital may be in a great measure compensated by the stimulus given to the industry of a man who cultivates his own land. This system is perhaps best calculated for mountainous countries, where the strongest motives to industry are required, to induce men to climb the steep rock in order to cultivate a small patch of earth favourably situated on its acclivity.

Neither can I agree with Arthur Young as to the disinclination of small proprietors to work for hire. In the Canton de Vaud, it is usual for the French-border peasantry, after having got in their own harvests, to descend the mountains of the Jura and assist in the labours of the Vandois: there they meet the Savoyards, whose crops, situ-

ated in the elevated valleys of the Alps, are not yet ripe; all parties unite their labours, apparently in a most joyous manner, and I am inclined to think that the prospect of receiving a pecuniary reward gives them an additional stimulus. Those who usually work without pay, feel a particular gratification in acquiring a little ready cash, and what they gain in this way goes to their clothing and a few little luxuries; the shops at Geneva are thronged after harvest time, both with French and Savoyard peasants, who are laying out their earnings.

CAROLINE.

I have heard that the condition of the lower agricultural classes in France has been very much improved by the sale of the national domains, at the commencement of the Revolution in that country; that it has enabled the small farmers and many of the peasantry to become landed proprietors, and thus to cultivate their own land; and that this subdivision of property has proved so beneficial that, notwithstanding all the evils they have since had to contend with, they are yet in a very thriving condition.

MRS. B.

By the sale of the national domains, very small proprietors, whose land was scarcely equal to the maintenance of their families, were enabled to enlarge their farms. The ill consequences arising

from an extreme subdivision of land would thus be remedied. But we must recollect that at the commencement of the French Revolution, the restrictive and oppressive laws which checked the progress of every branch of industry were abolished; this gave vigour to agricultural pursuits. Then the sale of confiscated lands, at a period when its tenure was considered as extremely insecure, rendered them so cheap, that it was almost as easy to purchase an estate in France as in America, with the additional advantage of its being already in a state of cultivation. These circumstances all concurred to improve the condition of the small landed proprietors. With a view of amassing little capitals to lay out upon their new domains, they have acquired habits of industry and economy, and such habits are of themselves a treasure to a country. At the same time it must be admitted, that very serious disadvantages result from a great division of landed property, even though the extreme division we have alluded to should be avoided. The small landed proprietor is deficient both in capital and in education; he has not the means of laying out money in the improvement of his land; and his ignorance generally renders him averse to any new process of agriculture, even though it should not be attended with additional expense. His land is therefore cultivated in a very inferior manner; he is frequently obliged to sell his crops at an unpro-

fitable period, and in seasons of distress he is nearly without resource.

CAROLINE.

And are there the same objections to small leasehold farms?

MRS. B.

In a great measure. It is poverty alone which induces a man to take a very small farm; and a poor farmer cannot make those exertions which are requisite for good husbandry. The profits of a considerable farmer enable him to improve his land; those of a small one are entirely consumed in the maintenance of his family; his land is therefore badly cultivated, and he has little or no surplus produce to send to market.

CAROLINE.

What sized farms do you suppose to be most beneficial to a country?

MRS. B.

That must vary extremely, according to the local situation, the nature of the climate and soil, and the capital of the farmer. In Belgium, which is esteemed one of the best cultivated countries in Europe, I am informed that the farms are upon an average about 40 acres; and in Tuscany, another spot remarkable for the excellence of its agriculture,

the farms seldom exceed 10 or 15 acres, all cultivated upon the Métayer system; but in this favoured climate the fields yield such abundant crops that the produce approaches more nearly to that of a Belgic farm than you would imagine from the difference of their extent.

In this country there is, I think, a strong predilection in favour of considerable farms. Were I to give an opinion, I should say that a farm should never be so large that the farmer cannot superintend the whole of the cultivation himself; nor so small as not to enable him to keep up that farming stock establishment necessary for the most perfect husbandry. But this is a point which may be safely left to regulate itself. I do not apprehend that this country can suffer by the different size of farms; for there are very few small landed properties; and as it is the interest of the landlord to draw the greatest possible income from his estate, he will let his farms of such dimensions as he conceives his tenant will be able to turn to the best account. To a very opulent farmer he may be induced to grant a lease of a large farm; whilst he will refuse that of a single field to a cottager who would exhaust instead of improving the soil.

The advantages of considerable farms have been so ably delineated in one of the numbers of the *Edinburgh Review* that I shall read you the passage :

“ It is quite evident that some of the most valu-  
 “ able mechanical ~~inventions~~ could never have  
 “ come into general use if there had been no farms  
 “ of more than 100 or 150 acres; that no great  
 “ improvement could have been made in our live  
 “ stock; that there would have been still less room  
 “ than there is at present for the division of labour,  
 “ and for its accumulation for the purpose of dis-  
 “ patch at particular seasons; that there would not  
 “ have been that systematic arrangement by which  
 “ every different quality of soil is made to produce  
 “ those crops, and to feed those sorts of animals for  
 “ which it is best calculated; that it would have  
 “ been almost impracticable to practise convertible  
 “ husbandry at all, which by combining tillage and  
 “ pasturage on the same farm, contributes so power-  
 “ fully to sustain and augment the fertility of the  
 “ soil; that the surplus produce for the supply of  
 “ towns would have been inconsiderable at all  
 “ times, and from the general poverty of small  
 “ tenants brought to market in too great abun-  
 “ dance in the early part of the season, instead  
 “ of apportioning it over the whole year; and  
 “ in bad seasons there would have been no sur-  
 “ plus at all: — and that, in short, as no person  
 “ of capital or enterprise would ever have en-  
 “ tered into the profession, our extensive moors  
 “ and morasses, and indeed all our inferior  
 “ soils must have remained in their natural state,

“or been partially and most unprofitably improved under the delegated management of great proprietors.”

It is now, I think, high time to conclude the subject of agriculture; and it is necessary to say only a few words on Mining, a branch of industry which I have placed next to agriculture, on account of its analogy to it, in affording a rent.

Mines, like the surface of the earth, yielding different quantities of produce according to their respective degrees of richness, all those which are not of the poorest quality must afford a rent.

CAROLINE.

The price of the metals, then, like that of corn, must be regulated by the expense of producing it from the last mines opened?

MRS. B.

Your observation applies, with more correctness, to the produce of the surface of the earth; the land last cultivated is generally the poorest, or labours under other disadvantages, which have prevented its being sooner brought under the plough; but mines being less open to observation, new mines are not unfrequently discovered, which yield more metal than others previously worked. You should rather say, therefore, that the price of metal is regulated by the expense of extracting it from the poorest mines now worked.

The same laws apply to coal-pits, which, notwithstanding the great assistance derived from machinery, give work to several hundred thousand labourers who earn their maintenance, besides the profits of their employer and the rent of the proprietor ; and this rent is in general more considerable than that of agricultural land, as the produce of coal-pits is more valuable than that of the soil.

CAROLINE.

The mines containing metals are, I suppose, of still greater value ?

MRS. B.

Yes, and their rent proportionally higher ; but the profits of the capitalist who rents them, and of the labourers who work them, is not greater. As the value of a mine, however, depends upon the quantity, as well as on the quality of the metal it affords, it frequently happens that a lead-mine will fetch a higher rent than a silver-mine. The expense of working coal-pits is less than that of metallic mines. The coal requires nothing more than to be extracted from the earth : but with the metals the labour is much more complicated ; they must be separated from the ore in the furnace, and undergo a variety of processes before they are fit for the purposes of art.

The risk and uncertainty attending mining is



greater than that of any other employment of capital; and accordingly we find both larger fortunes made, and more people ruined in that than in any other branch of industry.

CAROLINE.

The chance of gain, then, compensates for the risk of loss; but upon the whole I suppose the profits are similar to those derived from other modes of employing capital?

MRS. B.

I am inclined to believe the profits of mining to be rather lower than the common standard. In all hazardous enterprises men are prone to trust to their good fortune, and generally consider the chances more in their favour than an accurate calculation would warrant. This is evinced by the readiness with which men venture to stake their money in the lottery, though it is well known that the chances of gain are decidedly against them. A mine is a more advantageous lottery no doubt than that of government, but it contains a prodigious number of blanks, and only a few great prizes. Sanguine hopes and expectations in some measure supply the place of actual gains; yet if the average profits of mining should at any time fall so low as to discourage the spirit of enterprise, and diminish the requisite supply of

metals, their price would rise until it had brought back a sufficient capital to that branch of industry.

I have mentioned fisheries as a source of employment for capital, and a means of affording a revenue. Very large capitals are engaged in the whale, the cod, and the herring fisheries, besides those smaller ones which supply the country with fresh fish. But as the sea in which these fisheries are carried on is not susceptible of becoming private property, they yield no rent. There are however some considerable inland river fisheries which belong to individuals, and bring in a rent. No fewer than forty-one different salmon fisheries upon the river Tweed are rented for several thousands a-year; and I am informed that the Duke of Gordon lets a salmon fishery on the Spey for 7000*l.* a-year. In the Scotch fisheries it is very common to take four or five score of salmon at a draught. In England there are also considerable salmon fisheries in the Tyne, the Trent, the Severn, and the Thames.

CAROLINE.

The rent of fisheries depends, I suppose, upon some rivers abounding more with fish than others.

MRS. B.

Yes; all rent is derived from the same principle, the lesser quantity of labour required to produce the commodity in some situations than in others.

We have already noticed the manner in which a revenue is obtained from manufactures; what further observations we have to make on this branch of industry we shall defer till we enter on the subject of trade, with which it is so naturally connected.

CAROLINE.

And will that be the subject of our next conversation?

MRS. B.

No; we have yet many general remarks to make upon revenue. And it will be necessary also, before we turn our attention to trade or commerce, that you should understand the nature and use of money, without a knowledge of which it would be extremely difficult to render the subject perspicuous.

## CONVERSATION XIV.

---

### ON THE REVENUE OF THOSE WHO DO NOT EMPLOY THEIR CAPITAL THEMSELVES.

RENT, OR INCOME DERIVED FROM LETTING LAND.

— INTEREST OF MONEY, OR INCOME DERIVED  
FROM LOANS. — CAUSES OF THE DIFFERENT RATE  
OF INTEREST YIELDED BY LAND OR BY MONEY.  
— CAUSES OF THE FLUCTUATIONS OF INTEREST.  
— RATE OF INTEREST IN INDIA, IN CHINA,  
AND IN AMERICA. — OF USURY. — GOVERNMENT  
LOANS, OR INCOME DERIVED FROM THE FUNDS.  
— OF UNPRODUCTIVE LABOURERS, OR THOSE  
WHO DERIVE AN INCOME FROM THE EXPENDI-  
TURE OF OTHERS.

---

CAROLINE.

I THINK I now understand very well how an  
income is derived from agriculture and manu-  
factures; and also how it is produced by trade;  
but there are many men of property who follow

none of these occupations; how, therefore, can their capital yield an income?

MRS. B.

When a man possesses a very large property, he frequently will not be at the trouble of employing it himself; but will engage some other person to do it for him. You have seen that a landed proprietor who does not farm his own estate derives a revenue from the farmer in the form of rent.

CAROLINE.

But I allude to men of fortune without landed property, who live upon their income, although their capital is not employed.

MRS. B.

Reflect a moment, and you will be convinced that no capital can yield an income without being employed. If, therefore, the owner does not invest it in some branch of industry himself, another person must do it for him. A capitalist under such circumstances may be supposed to say, "I am possessed of an ample stock of subsistence for labourers, and of materials for workmanship, but I will engage some other person to take charge of so troublesome an undertaking as that of setting the people to work, and collecting the profits derived from their labours."

CAROLINE.

This person must be handsomely remunerated for the time and pains he bestows on the management of a capital which is not his own.

MRS. B.

No doubt; a considerable share of the profits derived from the use of capital must go to him who takes charge of it; but when a man's property is very large, he would rather lose that share than be at the trouble of managing it himself. Thus you see that the employer and the proprietor of capital are frequently different persons.

CAROLINE.

Yet I do not recollect ever to have heard of a man of fortune making use of an agent to employ his capital.

MRS. B.

He does not engage an agent on his own account, but he lends his capital to some person who invests it either in agriculture, manufactures, or trade, and who pays him so much per cent. for the use of it. This is called lending money at interest.

CAROLINE.

Is it then simply *money* that is lent; or *capital* consisting of produce?

MRS. B.

It is eventually the same; for money gives the borrower a command over a proportional share of the produce of the country. If the money would not purchase the things which the borrower wanted, it would not answer his purpose; but it will procure him either materials or implements for work, maintenance for labourers, stock for farming, or merchandise for trade. In a word, it will enable him to exert his industry in whatever way he chooses.

CAROLINE.

I should have imagined that it would have been more advantageous to the capitalist to have engaged an agent at a stipulated salary, for the purpose of undertaking the use of his capital?

MRS. B.

Your plan would probably not answer so well; for if, instead of lending his capital at interest, a man of property paid an agent to employ it for him, the agent would be less cautious what risks he engaged in, as he would not be a sufferer by losses.

CAROLINE.

But is not the loan of capital at interest liable to the same objection? If the employer of capital be ruined, the proprietor of it must share the same fate.

MRS. B.

This not unfrequently happens; yet there is less risk incurred in this mode than if the employer of capital could injure the proprietor without being himself involved in the same fate; and it would be so if he acted as clerk or agent, as he would lose only his salary, although the proprietor might be utterly ruined.

Prudent men seldom lend capital without good security. If the loan is made to a merchant, it is not unfrequent to require other merchants, or men of property, to become responsible for the payment. If to a man of landed property, the capital is lent upon the security of his estate; that is to say, if the loan be not repaid according to agreement, the lender has the right to seize that particular property, upon the security of which the capital was advanced. This is called lending money upon the security of mortgage.

CAROLINE.

That must be the best kind of security, for the land cannot be made away with. It is making fixed capital responsible for circulating capital.

The man who borrows capital with a view to employ it, must necessarily expect to make greater profits than will pay the interest of the loan, otherwise he would be no gainer by it.



MRS. B.

Certainly. The average profits of the use of capital may be estimated at about double the interest of money. Legal interest, that is to say, the highest rate which the law allows to be given, is five per cent., and the usual profits of trade are about ten per cent.

CAROLINE.

Therefore the lender and the borrower, or in other words the proprietor and employer of capital, commonly divide the profits arising from it equally between them; the one making as much by his property as the other by his industry.

The landed proprietor who lets his land to a farmer, I conceive to be situated in the same manner as the man who lends his capital at interest, neither of them choosing to undertake the employment of their capitals themselves, but procuring some other person to do it for them; and the rent the farmer pays for the use of the land is similar to the interest paid for the use of capital?

MRS. B.

It is so; and the advantages derived from letting land are analogous to those that result from the loan of capital. We have observed that if the farmer, instead of paying a rent, received a certain stipend for his labour, and reserved the whole of

the produce for the landlord, he would certainly be less attentive to the cultivation of the land than if his gains resulted from the value of the produce raised.

There is, however, one essential difference between borrowing capital and renting land. The man who borrows capital to be employed in trade or manufactures, requires nothing more to enable him to prosecute his business. Whilst the farmer who borrows land cannot undertake the cultivation of it without the assistance of another capital, which he must either possess or borrow for that purpose.

CAROLINE.

Then there is another difference. The landed proprietor and the farmer do not divide the profits arising from the cultivation of the land equally between them, as is usually, you say, the case with the lender and borrower of capital; for the farmer makes greater profits by the use of the land than the proprietor by the rent.

MRS. B.

There are several reasons for this difference. In the first place you must recollect that the profits of capital vary with the degrees of risk to which it is exposed; and then consider that an income derived from the rent of land is much more secure than any other kind of revenue. For

if the farmer ruin himself, he cannot make away with the land : he may be obliged to quit his farm, but then his stock is liable to seizure for the payment of rent.

Another considerable advantage attached to landed property is, that in proportion as agriculture improves, the produce of the land increases ; this augments the profits of the farmer, and enables the landlord to raise his rent. And lastly, we must call to mind the observations we made on the origin of rent ; and we shall find that in proportion as agriculture extends, and new and inferior lands are taken into cultivation, the rent of land rises. If you weigh all these advantages, you will no longer be surprised that a landed proprietor should be satisfied with making between three and four per cent. of his capital, instead of lending it at five per cent. interest, with more or less risk of loss, and a certainty that the capital will not improve.

CAROLINE.

The real profit, therefore, to be derived from the loan of capital perfectly secure, is between three and four per cent., and whatever is received above that sum may be considered as an indemnification for the risk to which it is exposed ?

MRS. B.

If you take the improvable nature of rent, as

well as its perfect security into the calculation, some deduction may be allowed in consideration of the certain prospect of future increase; the profit to be derived from the loan of capital, even when the security is perfect, may therefore be estimated somewhat higher than that which is afforded by the rent of land.

We must now make a few observations upon the interest of money.

The interest of money, or price paid for the loan of capital, was formerly much higher than it is at present. It has gradually diminished for some centuries past.

CAROLINE.

And why should that be the case?

MRS. B.

Whenever great profits can be made by the employment of capital, great interest will be given for the loan of it. When, on the contrary, but small profits can be made, the interest will be low.

Thus, as I have already pointed out to you, when a nation advances in opulence and population, so as to render it requisite to take inferior soils into cultivation, the necessaries of life become dearer, the wages of labour rise, the profits on capital are low, and the interest of money will generally correspond with the rate of such profits, for the borrower can afford to pay only in propor-

tion to the profits he expects to make by the use of it.

A great and sudden accession of capital, by increasing the demand for labour, will raise wages, and diminish profits; but this effect will last only till population increases in the same ratio,—it is then that it will be necessary to turn up new and inferior land, and the effect becomes permanent. Thus the greater or lesser demand for labour makes profits and interest fluctuate; but the only steady and permanent cause of the diminution of profits and of interest is the cultivation of inferior soils.

During the reign of the Emperor Augustus, the interest of money at Rome fell from ten to four per cent., owing to the great influx of wealth from the conquered provinces. In India, where the proportion of capital to the number of labourers is comparatively small, wages are extremely low, and the profits of capital and interest of money exorbitantly high. The common rate of interest was for a long time twelve per cent., and I have heard that it is not unusual to make as much as twenty, or even thirty per cent. interest. In China, interest is six per cent. per month.

CAROLINE.

And is interest low in America, where labourers are scarce and wages high?

MRS. B.

No, it is not; on account of the great profits made by agriculture. In a country not yet fully peopled, where there is so great a choice of fertile land, that scarcely any of an inferior quality is brought into cultivation, and consequently where little or no rent is paid, the cultivator can afford to give high wages, and yet make great profits; and wherever great gains can be made by the use of capital, high interest will be given for the loan of it. Therefore, though capital has been increasing in America more rapidly than in any other country; yet as immediate and advantageous employment is found for every accession of capital by the cultivation of new and fruitful lands, the interest of money does not fall.

In all old-established fully peopled countries the low interest of money is a sign of great accumulation of capital, abundant population, extensive cultivation of a variety of soils, high price of raw produce, high wages of labour, and small profits.

CAROLINE.

If I understand you right, you mean to say that a borrower will give but little for the loan of capital when he can make but small profits by it; that he can make but small profits when he must pay high wages; that wages will be high whenever

subsistence is dear ; that subsistence will be dear when inferior soils are taken into cultivation ; that inferior soils are taken into cultivation when population multiplies, and that population multiplies when wages are high, in consequence of accumulation of capital.

MRS. B.

Thus we trace low interest to a source which is the origin of national prosperity — accumulation of capital.

CAROLINE.

But I thought that the interest of money was fixed by law, and incapable of fluctuation ?

MRS. B.

The legal interest in this country is 5 per cent. ; it may fall below that rate, though it cannot rise above it without becoming usury. In former times, to receive any remuneration for the loan of money was regarded much in the same light as usury is at present ; that is to say, as taking an unfair advantage of the borrower.

CAROLINE.

Such an opinion could have been entertained by those only who understood nothing of the reproductive nature of capital ; for had they been aware of the profits to be made by the employment of

money, they could not have considered it as unfair to pay for the use of it.

MRS. B.

Our forefathers had no pretensions to a knowledge of political economy; it is a science of later date. The prejudice against lending money at interest appears not to have prevailed in very ancient times, but to have originated in the darkness of the middle ages; for the interest of money was legally instituted both amongst the Grecians and the Romans. It must have been an established practice in the time of Solon, since it is upon record that he reduced the legal interest to 12 per cent. The Bramins, in India, are said to have taken  $2\frac{1}{2}$  per cent. monthly, so far back as 3000 years, and yet legal interest was not established in modern Europe until the year 1516.

~~Masperson~~ Masperson, in his History of Commerce, makes the following observations on the unpopularity of receiving interest for the loan of money: "In the  
"year 1251," he observes, "the consequence of  
"the clamour and persecution raised against those  
"who took interest for the use of money was so  
"violent, that they were obliged to charge it much  
"higher than the natural price, (which if it had  
"been let alone would have found its level,) in  
"order to compensate for the opprobrium, and  
"frequently the plunder which they suffered; and



“thence the usual rate of interest was, what we  
 “should now call most exorbitant and scandalous  
 “usury.” And what we now call exorbitant and  
 scandalous usury proceeds in a great measure from  
 a similar prejudice, which prevents the interest of  
 money, like all other pecuniary interests, from find-  
 ing its natural level, and stamps with criminality,  
 and the odium of usury, any bargain in which  
 money is lent at a higher interest than 5 per cent.,  
 however great the risk incurred by the lender.  
 Why should there be a limit to the terms on which  
 money may be borrowed, any more than to the  
 borrowing, or I should rather say, to the hiring  
 any other commodity?

CAROLINE.

Would not such unlimited freedom of interest  
 afford too great encouragement to capitalists to  
 supply prodigals and thoughtless youths with mo-  
 ney, and thus facilitate their means of squander-  
 ing it?

MRS. B.

Men of this description find no difficulty in bor-  
 rowing of usurers, provided they are able to give  
 security for the payment, and without such security  
 they would not obtain the loan of money either  
 from men of respectability or from crafty usurers.  
 The only difference now is, that they must pay a  
 higher price for the loan, because the lender re-

quires to be remunerated, not only for the use of the money, and the risk he incurs, but also for the ignominy and criminality attached to the proceeding; this necessarily takes it out of the hands of men of honourable character, and throws it into those of people, who having no value for reputation, are much more likely to take undue advantage of the distress of men who are in urgent want of money, and of the unguarded thoughtlessness of prodigal youth.

There is yet another means by which a man of property may derive an income from his capital without employing it himself: it is by lending it to a borrower who is distinguished from all others by the singularity of his dealings—who borrows not only without any intention of making profits by the use of the capital: but also, in general, without any prospect of repaying the principal of the debt.

CAROLINE.

Without any prospect of repaying the debt! And where can they find people who will agree to lend capital on such terms?

MRS. B.

This extraordinary borrower is no other than the government of the country. When government makes a loan, that is to say, borrows capital, it is for the purpose of spending it as soon as pro-

cured; and the proprietors of this capital, or, as they are usually denominated, the public creditors or stockholders, scarcely ever expect that the debt should be repaid. Yet notwithstanding this circumstance men are willing to lend their money to government even upon lower terms than to other borrowers. This arises from two causes; the first that the security of government for the punctual payment of the interest is better than that of any individual; and the second, that the public creditor has an indirect means of getting back his capital whenever he pleases, without being repaid by government.

CAROLINE.

In what way?

MRS. B.

By selling his right to receive the interest, to any individual who wishes to invest his capital in the funds, and who will then stand in the place of the original creditor.

CAROLINE.

And can he always sell that right for the sum he originally lent to government?

MRS. B.

Not always exactly; he will sometimes get more and sometimes less, according to the state of the

market. If there are many creditors or stockholders desirous to sell, and but few capitalists wishing to buy, he will get less; if many buyers and few sellers, he will obtain more: in the latter case the stocks are said to be high, or rising; in the former, to be low, or falling.

CAROLINE.

But since government spends the capital borrowed instead of deriving any profit from it, by what means is the interest paid?

MRS. B.

It is paid by taxes levied expressly for that purpose.

CAROLINE.

If, then, government spends what is borrowed, the capital no longer exists, and the stockholder remains possessed of only an imaginary or fictitious capital.

MRS. B.

He remains possessed of the right to receive an annual payment, or annuity, equal to the stipulated interest, till the government pays him back the principal. And this annuity (where the government can be depended upon) will always sell for its value to such persons as have capital which they wish to

lend at interest. It is thus that the stockholder is enabled to realise this fictitious capital, whenever he chooses, by selling his stock. The capital is, therefore, not lost to the individual; but it is entirely lost to the country. The stock may be sold, but the sale does not re-create the capital that has been spent; it merely transfers to the seller capital already existing in the hands of the buyer, and which would equally have existed whether the stock were sold or not. So long, however, as it can be exchanged for real capital, and in the mean time produces a substantial income to the possessor, it affords him all the enjoyments that can be derived from wealth.

CAROLINE.

And is it not very injurious to the prosperity of a country that the government should spend its capital?

MRS. B.

No doubt; but under some circumstances it is an unavoidable evil. In cases of urgent danger during a war, it is often necessary to raise larger sums of money, and with more expedition, than can be obtained by taxes; recourse is then had to loans, which, if not paid off, accumulate by repetitions, and become at length a heavy national debt, and a great burden to the country,

owing to the taxes that must be raised in order to pay the interest.

We may return to this subject at some future time; let me now ask you whether you fully understand how those who do not employ their capital themselves derive an income from it?

CAROLINE.

Through the agency of others, who, if the capital consists in land, pay them rent; if in money, pay them interest.

MRS. B.

Very well; take care, however, not to be misled by the term *money*, for no man's capital consists wholly in money. It must consist chiefly either in lands or saleable produce, rude or manufactured; all of which is *estimated* in money. And you cannot, as I said before, have clear ideas on this subject until the nature and use of money have been explained to you.

We have now examined all the modes by which men derive a revenue from their capital; there yet remains to be noticed a class of men who are maintained by the revenue of others.

CAROLINE.

Do you mean labourers, who are maintained by wages, and bring a profit to their employers?

MRS. B.

No; these, whom we have distinguished by the name of *productive labourers*, are maintained by the *capital* of others; whilst the class of men to whom I now allude are maintained by the *income* of others. They are labourers, it is true; but of this peculiar description, that their labour is totally unproductive; they consume without re-producing: their labour, therefore, can add nothing to the future wealth of the country, and hence they are called *unproductive labourers*.

CAROLINE.

I think I guess what description of people you mean; are not menial servants unproductive labourers?

MRS. B.

Yes, they are; for their labour, however useful, does not augment the riches of the country. A productive labourer is paid out of the value of the work he produces: this work remains with his employer, and may be either accumulated or exchanged for other commodities; but the labour of the menial servant, so far from increasing the revenue of his master, is an expense to him, his wages being necessarily paid with the produce of some other labour.

## CAROLINE.

There is no doubt an essential difference between these two kinds of labourers : keeping a number of workmen is a source of wealth, whilst keeping a number of menial servants is a source of expense.

## MRS. B.

The one is the employment of capital ; the other the expenditure of income. ~~Franklin~~ in his Correspondence, expresses this difference with his usual perspicuity and neatness : — “ The first elements  
 “ of wealth are obtained by labour from the earth  
 “ and waters. I have land and I raise corn : with  
 “ this I feed a family that does nothing ; my corn  
 “ will be consumed, and at the end of the year I  
 “ shall be no richer than I was at the beginning.  
 “ But if, while I feed them, I employ them, some  
 “ in spinning, others in hewing timber and sawing  
 “ boards, others in making bricks for building,  
 “ the value of my corn will be arrested, and re-  
 “ main with me, and at the end of the year we  
 “ may all be better clothed and better lodged.  
 “ And if instead of employing a man, I feed, in  
 “ making bricks, I employ him in fiddling for me,  
 “ the corn he eats is gone, and no part of his ma-  
 “ nufacture remains to augment the wealth and  
 “ conveniences of the family : I shall therefore be  
 “ the poorer for this fiddling man, unless the rest



“ of my family work more or eat less to make up  
 “ the deficiency he occasions.”

But the class of unproductive labourers is far from being confined to menial servants ; it extends to all the servants of the public : actors, singers, dancers, and all those who are maintained by the productive labour of others, are of this description.

CAROLINE.

Is it not to be regretted that these people cannot be compelled to a more useful mode of employment ?

MRS. B.

Their labour, though of an unproductive nature, is generally useful. Servants, for instance, by relieving the productive labourer of much necessary work, enable him to do more than he could otherwise accomplish. Thus a man engaged in the employment of a considerable capital can spend his time to greater advantage, both to himself and to the community, than in cleaning his own shoes and cooking his own dinner.

CAROLINE.

The use of servants is evidently attended with some of the benefits of the division of labour.

MRS. B.

You will probably be surprised to hear that

many of the most valuable ranks of society are included in the class of unproductive labourers. The divine, the physician, the soldier, ministers of state, and magistrates, are of this description.

## CAROLINE.

I did not imagine that the class of unproductive labourers had been so respectable. And although their labour is of an unproductive nature, they are, I think, in many instances, more valuable members of society than some of the productive labourers. A magistrate, who faithfully administers justice ; a physician, who restores health ; a clergyman, who teaches religion and morals ; are certainly of more essential benefit to society, than the confectioner or the perfumer, or any of those productive labourers who are employed in the fabrication of luxuries.

## MRS. B.

No doubt they are. There is no greater stimulus to industry than security of property ; justice is therefore essentially necessary to encourage productive labour ; and the legislator and magistrate, though they do not immediately produce commodities, are as necessary to their production as the labours of the husbandman or artisan.

## CONVERSATION XV.

---

### ON VALUE AND PRICE.

OF THE VALUE OF COMMODITIES.—OF THE DISTINCTION BETWEEN EXCHANGEABLE VALUE AND PRICE.—OF THE CAUSE OF VALUE.—OF VALUE IN USE, AND VALUE IN EXCHANGE.—OF THE COST OF PRODUCTION, OR NATURAL VALUE OF COMMODITIES.—OF THE COMPONENT PARTS OF THE COST OF PRODUCTION, RENT, PROFIT, AND WAGES.—OF THEIR IMPERFECTION AS A MEASURE OF VALUE.—OF SUPPLY AND DEMAND.—OF THE COMPONENT PARTS OF THE EXCHANGEABLE VALUE OF COMMODITIES.—HIGH PRICE OF COMMODITIES ARISING FROM SCARCITY.—LOW PRICE ARISING FROM EXCESSIVE SUPPLY.—LOW PRICE ARISING FROM DIMINUTION OF COST OF PRODUCTION.

---

MRS. B.

BEFORE we proceed to the subject of trade, it is necessary that you should understand what is meant by the value of commodities.

CAROLINE.

That cannot be very difficult; it is one of the first things we learn.

MRS. B.

What is learnt at an age when the understanding is not yet well developed, is not always well learnt. What do you understand by the value of commodities?

CAROLINE.

We call things valuable which cost a great deal of money; a diamond necklace, for instance, is very valuable.

MRS. B.

But if, instead of money, you gave, in exchange for the necklace, silk or cotton goods, tea, sugar, or any other commodity, would you not still call the necklace valuable?

CAROLINE.

Certainly I should; for, supposing the necklace to be worth 1000*l.*, it is immaterial whether I give 1000*l.* in money, or 1000*l.* worth of any thing else in exchange for it.

MRS. B.

The value of a commodity is therefore estimated by the quantity of other things *generally* for which it will exchange, and hence it is frequently called exchangeable value.

CAROLINE.

Or, in other words, the *price* of a commodity.

MRS. B.

No; *price* does not admit of so extensive a signification. The price of a commodity is its exchangeable value, estimated in *money only*. It is necessary that you should remember this distinction.

CAROLINE.

But what is it that renders a commodity valuable? I always thought that its price was the cause of its value; but I begin to perceive that I was mistaken: for things are valuable independently of money; it is their real intrinsic value which induces people to give money for them.

MRS. B.

Certainly; money cannot impart value to commodities; it is merely the scale by which their value is measured; as a yard measures a piece of cloth.

CAROLINE.

I think the value of things must consist in their utility, for we commonly value a commodity according to the use we can make of it. Food, clothing, houses, carriages, furniture, have all their several uses.

MRS. B.

That is true; yet there are some things of the most general and important utility, such, for instance, as light, air, and water, which, however indispensable to our welfare, have no exchangeable value; nothing is given for them, nor can any thing be obtained in exchange for them. Utility, therefore, does not in all cases produce exchangeable value. N

CAROLINE.

No one will give any thing for what is so plentiful, and so readily obtained that every one may have as much as he requires, without making any sacrifice: but as light, air, and water, are essential even to our existence, surely they should be esteemed valuable.

MRS. B.

No doubt they are, but it is in a point of view different from that of exchangeable value. Dr. Adam Smith distinguishes two kinds of value; the one arising from utility, the other from what can be obtained in exchange. He says, "The word "*value*, it is to be observed, has two different meanings; it sometimes expresses the utility of some particular object, and sometimes the power of purchasing other goods which the possession of that object conveys. The one may be

“ called *value in use*, the other *value in exchange*.  
“ The things which have the greatest value in use  
“ have frequently little or no value in exchange;  
“ and, on the contrary, those that have the great-  
“ est value in exchange, have frequently little or no  
“ value in use. Nothing is more useful than water,  
“ but it will purchase scarce any thing; scarce  
“ any thing can be had in exchange for it. A  
“ diamond, on the contrary, has scarce any value  
“ in use, but a very great quantity of other goods  
“ may frequently be had in exchange for it.”

Nature works for us gratuitously; and when she supplies us with articles in such abundance, that no labour is required to procure them, those articles, however useful they may be, have not exchangeable value: but when the labour of man becomes necessary to procure us the enjoyment of any commodity, he must be remunerated, and that commodity acquires a value; either a price is paid for it in money, or other things are given in exchange for it. Light, air, and water are the free and bountiful gifts of nature, but if a man constructs a lamp, we must pay for the light it diffuses: if we are indebted to his labours for a ventilator, or even a fan, we pay for the air they procure us; and when water is conveyed through pipes into our houses, raised by pumps, or brought to us in any manner by the art of man, a price is paid for it.

Utility may therefore be considered as the sole

cause of *value in use*, whilst *value in exchange* may be produced by any circumstance which renders the possession of an object so difficult of attainment, and at the same time so desirable, that men are willing to give something in exchange for it. Thus not only utility, but beauty, curiosity, fashion, rarity, and many other qualities, may create exchangeable value; and it is to this value that, in political economy, we chiefly confine our attention.

## CAROLINE.

There are many articles of luxury which are perfectly devoid of utility, such, for instance, as pictures, jewels, artificial flowers, and other ornaments; these are valued either for their beauty, their curiosity, or their rarity.

But, Mrs. B., if an object is valuable in proportion as we are desirous to obtain it, its value will vary with respect to different persons to whom its possession may be more or less desirable. Thus, medicine to the sick, and food to the hungry will be more valuable than to the healthy and the well fed.

## MRS. B.

The value of a commodity is not estimated by the sacrifice which those in the most urgent want would make rather than be deprived of it; but by what is requisite to be given in exchange, in order to obtain it. The apothecary knows that if he



endeavoured to take advantage of the sick man's necessity to raise the price of his medicine, it would be procured at another shop; and that instead of making an exorbitant profit he would lose a customer; and if the hungry man were attempted to be imposed upon in a similar manner, he would purchase food elsewhere: thus competition (under ordinary circumstances) prevents undue advantage being taken of the wants of individuals.

CAROLINE.

What is it, then, that regulates the exchangeable value of commodities; you have said that it was estimated by the quantity of things given in exchange for them, but I wish to know what it is that determines the specific quantity to be given?

MRS. B.

It is fundamentally regulated by the cost of production of the commodity, that is to say, the expense laid out upon it in order to bring it to a saleable state. A great deal of labour has been bestowed upon that book-case; if the workmen who made it were not repaid, they would no longer make book-cases, but seek some more profitable employment. The price of a commodity, therefore, must be sufficient to defray the cost of production.

CAROLINE.

But, Mrs. B., the money which this book-case cost does not all go to the workmen who made it; the materials of which it is made must be paid for; the upholsterer who sold it derives a profit from it.

MRS. B.

It was his capital which purchased the raw materials, which furnished the tools, and set the journeymen to work; without this aid the book-case could not have been made. The price of commodities is the reward not only of those who prepared or fabricated them, but also of every productive labourer who has been employed in bringing them to a saleable state, for each of these concurred in giving value to the commodity.

We have formerly observed that no work can be undertaken without the use of capital, as well to maintain the labourer as to supply him with the implements to work with, and the materials to work upon. Subsisting upon this maintenance, and working with these implements, he is to transform the useless trunk of a tree into a useful or beautiful piece of furniture, which acquires value in proportion as it becomes an object of desire. The profit of capital is, therefore, a component part of the value of a commodity, as well as the wages of labour. There remains yet a third component part

of the value of a commodity, which a little reflection will, I think, enable you to discover.

CAROLINE.

Agricultural produce must, besides the wages of labour, and profit of capital, pay the rent of the land on which it is raised. But this will not be the case with manufactured goods.

MRS. B.

The raw materials for manufactures are all, or almost all, the produce of land, and consequently must defray the expence of rent, the same as corn or hay. But rent does not enter into the price of commodities in the same manner as the profit of capital, or the wages of labour, because, as you may recollect, rent is the *effect*, not the *cause* of the high price of commodities. Dr. ~~Smith~~ observes, that  
“ high or low wages are the causes of high or low  
“ price; high or low rent is the effect of it. It is  
“ because high or low wages or profit must be  
“ made, in order to bring a particular commodity  
“ to market, that its price is high or low. But it  
“ is because its price is high or low, a great deal  
“ more, or very little more, or no more than what  
“ is sufficient to pay those wages and profit, that  
“ it affords a high rent, or a low rent, or no rent  
“ at all.”

Let us now observe how the value of a commo-

dity resolves itself into these three component parts. Take, for instance, a load of hay ; its price pays, first, the wages of the labourer who cut down the grass and made it into hay ; then the profits of the farmer who sells it ; and, lastly, the rent of the field in which it grew. This, therefore, constitutes the whole cost of production of the load of hay ; and may be called its *natural value*.

CAROLINE.

But, Mrs. B., if rent does not raise the price of commodities, how can you consider it as forming a component part of their value ?

MRS. B.

That part of the value of commodities which goes to the landlord in the form of rent would, were there no rent, go to the cultivator in the form of profit ; it is, therefore, immaterial under which head you consider it.

CAROLINE.

Or should the commodity be produced on land of too poor a quality to afford a rent, rent could no longer be considered as entering into the cost of its production.

MRS. B.

Certainly not ; these three component parts of

the natural value of a commodity are not always essentially necessary to its production ; one or other of them may occasionally be deficient.

CAROLINE.

Pray let me try whether I could trace the various payments made to the several persons concerned in the production of a loaf of bread. — Its price must first pay the wages of the journeyman baker who made it ; then the profits of capital of the master-baker who sells it ; next the wages of the miller who ground the corn, and the profits of the master who employs him ; afterwards the wages of the several husbandmen who cultivated the field of corn ; the profits of the farmer ; and, lastly, a portion of the rent of his farm.

MRS. B.

Exactly so. Thus you see that the value of a commodity is composed of three parts, *rent*, *profit*, and *wages* ; the rent of the proprietor of the land, the profits of the several employers of capital, and the wages of the various labourers who give it qualities which render it an object of desire, and consequently a saleable commodity.

It sometimes happens that the proprietor of land, and farmer, and even the labourer, are united in one individual. We have already observed, that in many parts of America the cultivators of the

land are both proprietors and labourers, and reap the reward of rent, profit, and wages.

CAROLINE.

And in this country a cottager who possesses a little garden cultivated by his own hands, and of which he brings the produce to market, likewise concentrates in himself all the advantages of proprietor, capitalist, and labourer; for he sells his vegetables for the same price as a market-gardener, who has to deduct from the price the rent of the garden and the wages of the labourer.

MRS. B.

But he is not, therefore, the greater gainer, for if he has no rent to pay, it is because he has laid out a capital in the purchase of the land; and if he pays no wages, it is because he works himself, and employs that labour which might otherwise bring him wages: then some capital is used to purchase garden-tools, manure, or whatever may be requisite for the culture of his garden.

CAROLINE.

I think I now understand perfectly well how rent, profit, and wages enter into the value of commodities. I may say, for instance, so much rent, profit, and wages has been expended in the production of this carpet, and therefore I must pay

a sum of money for it, if I wish to purchase it; but how am I thence to infer what sum of money it is worth?

MRS. B.

By applying the same scale or measure to estimate the value of money, that you have applied to estimate the value of the carpet. Examine what quantity of rent, profit, and wages was bestowed upon the production of the money, and you will be able to ascertain how much of it should be given in exchange for the carpet, or, in other words, what the carpet is worth in money. I paid 20 guineas for this carpet; I conclude therefore that the cost of production of the carpet is equal to the cost of production of 20 guineas.

CAROLINE.

But it would be impossible to calculate with any degree of accuracy the quantity of rent, profit, and wages which a commodity cost, and still less that of the gold or silver for which it is sold.

MRS. B.

Nor is it necessary to enter into this calculation; it is by long experience only that the world forms an estimation of the relative value of different commodities, sufficiently accurate for the purposes of exchange. The calculations to which we have been alluding, though true in principle, are by no means susceptible of being brought into practical use.

CAROLINE.

Yet when barter was first introduced, one savage might say to another: 'It is not just to offer me a hare, which is the produce of a day's hunting, in exchange for a bow which I have spent three days in making; I will not part with it unless you give me also the fruit which you gathered in the woods yesterday, and the fish you caught the day before; in short, I will not exchange the produce of my toil and trouble for less than the produce of an equal share of your toil and trouble.' And surely this is much more clear and simple reasoning than to say that the bow is worth so much money?

MRS. B.

To a savage unacquainted with money it certainly is; but I believe that in the present times people understand better the value of a commodity estimated in money.

CAROLINE.

But if it were practicable to calculate with precision the quantity of rent, profit, and wages which had been expended on the production of commodities, *that*, I suppose, would constitute an accurate measure of their value.

MRS. B.

No; because there are other circumstances,



which, as we shall presently observe, affect the value of commodities. Besides, it would be impossible to calculate with any degree of accuracy the cost of production of a commodity, since rent, profit, and wages are all liable to vary in their own value; and we cannot adopt, as a *fixed* standard, a measure which is itself subject to change. If we were to measure a piece of cloth by a yard measure, which lengthened at one season of the year and shortened at another, it would not enable us to ascertain the length of the piece of cloth. Now, rent varies much according to the situation of the land, and the nature of the soil. Profit, according to the abundance or scarcity of capital; but nothing fluctuates more than the wages of labour; it differs not only in different countries, but even in the same town, according to the demand for labour, the strength, the skill, and the ingenuity of the labourer. A skilful artisan may not only do more work, but may do it in a superior manner, and he will require payment in the articles of his workmanship, not only for the labour he has bestowed on them, but also for the pains he has taken, and the time he has spent in acquiring his skill; the wages of a superior workman are for this reason much higher than those of a common labourer. Since, therefore, neither the quantity nor the quality of the labour bestowed on a commodity can be determined by the number of days

or hours employed in producing it, time is not a measure of the value of labour; we must take into account the degrees of skill and attention which the work may require, as also the healthy, pleasant or unpleasant, easy or severe nature of the employment, all of which are to be paid accordingly.

CAROLINE.

Thus the bow which employed the savage during three days might be worth twice the labour of the other savage during the same period of time; for much less skill is required to be a huntsman than to be a fabricator of bows and arrows.

MRS. B.

On the other hand, we find that eight hours of the labour of a coal-heaver will be paid much higher than the same number of hours of a weaver's labour, because, although the latter requires more skill, the first is much more severe and unpleasant labour. But the weaver will receive greater wages than a farmer's labourer, because the work of the latter is both more healthy and requires less skill.

Now, since it is impossible to enter into a calculation of all the shades of these various difficulties, rent, profit, and labour can never form an accurate standard of value.

CAROLINE.

They have at least enabled me to acquire a much

more clear and precise idea of value than I had before.

MRS. B.

Your idea of value is, however, yet far from being complete; for there are, as I have just observed, other circumstances to be considered independently of the cost of production, which materially influence the value of commodities. In a besieged town, for instance, provisions have frequently risen to twenty or thirty times their natural value, and have increased proportionally in price.

CAROLINE.

Their increased price in this case is owing merely to the scarcity, not to any increase of value, for were they as plentiful as usual they would sell at the usual price.

MRS. B.

Their high price is the consequence of their increased value, for they would not only sell for a greater sum of money, but also exchange for a greater quantity of any commodities, except such as are convertible into food.

CAROLINE.

Unless perhaps it were gunpowder, or any kind of ammunition, which in a besieged town might be as much in request as food.

MRS. B.

Certainly; in that case ammunition would rise in value as well as provisions.

Plenty and scarcity are, then, circumstances which considerably affect the value of commodities. Tell me whether you understand the meaning of the words, plenty and scarcity.

CAROLINE.

Yes, surely; when there is a great quantity of any thing, it is said to be plentiful; — when very little, it is scarce.

MRS. B.

If there was very little corn in a desert island, should you say there was a scarcity of corn there?

CAROLINE.

No; because as there would be no one to eat it, none would be wanted; and scarcity implies an insufficiency.

MRS. B.

And when a few years ago there was a scarcity of corn in this country, do you think that the whole of the island produced only a small quantity?

CAROLINE.

No; not positively a small quantity, but a smaller

quantity than was required to supply the whole of the population of the country with bread.

MRS. B.

Plenty and scarcity are therefore relative terms : a scarcity neither implies a small quantity, nor plenty a large one ; but the first implies an insufficiency, or less than is wanted ; the last as much, or perhaps more than is required. When there is plenty, the supply of the commodity being at least equal to the demand, every one who can pay the cost of its production will be able to purchase it. If, on the contrary, the commodity is scarce, some of these must go without it, and the apprehension of this privation produces competition amongst those who are desirous of buying the commodity, and this raises its value above the cost of production.

CAROLINE.

This, then, is the cause of the rise in the price of provisions in a besieged town ?

MRS. B.

Yes ; or during a famine, or in any case of scarcity. Whenever, on the contrary, the supply exceeds the demand, the price will fall below the natural value of the commodity.

You see, therefore, that the *natural value* and *exchangeable value* do not always coincide.

Scarcity  
Plenty

Scarcity  
Plenty

CAROLINE.

The exchangeable value appears to me to consist of the natural value, subject either to augmentation or diminution, in proportion as the commodity is scarce or plentiful.

MRS. B.

True; and it is this proportion, that is to say, the proportion of the supply to the demand, which regulates the *market price*.

CAROLINE.

That is very clear: if there are fewer chickens brought to market than are wanted, the supply being inadequate to the demand, the market price will rise; if more than are wanted, the demand exceeds the supply, and the market price will fall.

MRS. B.

There is some little difficulty in forming a clear conception of the meaning of the word *demand*; what do you understand by it?

CAROLINE.

I understand that those who go to market to buy chickens, by offering a price make a demand for them; that if there are more persons wanting to buy chickens than there are chickens to be sold, the demand is greater than the supply; if the contrary, the supply is greater than the demand.

MRS. B.

So far you are right ; but when chickens, in consequence of scarcity, rise considerably in price, will those who intended to purchase chickens, but who are not willing to give the advanced price, still make a demand for them ?

CAROLINE.

Why, no — it would be absurd to say that they demanded a thing at market for which they would not pay the market price ; yet as they would have bought chickens had they been at a reasonable price, the offer they had previously made must have tended to raise the market price.

MRS. B.

No doubt ; they formed part of the competition of bidders ; but when once the market price is fixed, the demand of all those, who either will not or cannot pay it, ceases.

CAROLINE.

Certainly ; I may either not be able to afford to pay the market price, in which case I want the means to purchase ; or finding chickens too dear, I may prefer buying butcher's meat ; if so, I want the will to purchase ; but in either case my demand ceases.

MRS. B.

What demand then remains? That of those alone who have both the power and the will to pay the market price.

This, which has been distinguished by the name of *effective demand*, will exactly coincide with the supply. It cannot exceed it, else you would have the will and the power to purchase more chickens than there are to be sold; and it cannot be inferior to it, otherwise the competition of buyers and sellers would have fixed the market price lower, in order to have disposed of all the supply.

CAROLINE.

But should the supply prove so abundant as to reduce the market price below the natural value; if chickens, for instance, should sell for only sixpence each; surely the owners, rather than dispose of them to such a disadvantage, would take them back, and run the chance of selling them better another day, or at another market. And if the whole were not sold, it appears to me that the supply would exceed the demand.

MRS. B.

If a seller is not distressed for ready money, and if he think the market price likely to improve, he will very naturally withdraw his goods, rather than sell them under the usual profits. But he who



a sum of money for it, if I wish to purchase it; but how am I thence to infer what sum of money it is worth?

MRS. B.

By applying the same scale or measure to estimate the value of money, that you have applied to estimate the value of the carpet. Examine what quantity of rent, profit, and wages was bestowed upon the production of the money, and you will be able to ascertain how much of it should be given in exchange for the carpet, or, in other words, what the carpet is worth in money. I paid 20 guineas for this carpet; I conclude therefore that the cost of production of the carpet is equal to the cost of production of 20 guineas.

CAROLINE.

But it would be impossible to calculate with any degree of accuracy the quantity of rent, profit, and wages which a commodity cost, and still less that of the gold or silver for which it is sold.

MRS. B.

Nor is it necessary to enter into this calculation; it is by long experience only that the world forms an estimation of the relative value of different commodities, sufficiently accurate for the purposes of exchange. The calculations to which we have been alluding, though true in principle, are by no means susceptible of being brought into practical use.

CAROLINE.

Yet when barter was first introduced, one savage might say to another: 'It is not just to offer me a hare, which is the produce of a day's hunting, in exchange for a bow which I have spent three days in making; I will not part with it unless you give me also the fruit which you gathered in the woods yesterday, and the fish you caught the day before; in short, I will not exchange the produce of my toil and trouble for less than the produce of an equal share of your toil and trouble.' And surely this is much more clear and simple reasoning than to say that the bow is worth so much money?

MRS. B.

To a savage unacquainted with money it certainly is; but I believe that in the present times people understand better the value of a commodity estimated in money.

CAROLINE.

But if it were practicable to calculate with precision the quantity of rent, profit, and wages which had been expended on the production of commodities, *that*, I suppose, would constitute an accurate measure of their value.

MRS. B.

No; because there are other circumstances,

which, as we shall presently observe, affect the value of commodities. Besides, it would be impossible to calculate with any degree of accuracy the cost of production of a commodity, since rent, profit, and wages are all liable to vary in their own value; and we cannot adopt, as a *fixed* standard, a measure which is itself subject to change. If we were to measure a piece of cloth by a yard measure, which lengthened at one season of the year and shortened at another, it would not enable us to ascertain the length of the piece of cloth. Now, rent varies much according to the situation of the land, and the nature of the soil. Profit, according to the abundance or scarcity of capital; but nothing fluctuates more than the wages of labour; it differs not only in different countries, but even in the same town, according to the demand for labour, the strength, the skill, and the ingenuity of the labourer. A skilful artisan may not only do more work, but may do it in a superior manner, and he will require payment in the articles of his workmanship, not only for the labour he has bestowed on them, but also for the pains he has taken, and the time he has spent in acquiring his skill; the wages of a superior workman are for this reason much higher than those of a common labourer. Since, therefore, neither the quantity nor the quality of the labour bestowed on a commodity can be determined by the number of days

or hours employed in producing it, time is not a measure of the value of labour; we must take into account the degrees of skill and attention which the work may require, as also the healthy, pleasant or unpleasant, easy or severe nature of the employment, all of which are to be paid accordingly.

CAROLINE.

Thus the bow which employed the savage during three days might be worth twice the labour of the other savage during the same period of time; for much less skill is required to be a huntsman than to be a fabricator of bows and arrows.

MRS. B.

On the other hand, we find that eight hours of the labour of a coal-heaver will be paid much higher than the same number of hours of a weaver's labour, because, although the latter requires more skill, the first is much more severe and unpleasant labour. But the weaver will receive greater wages than a farmer's labourer, because the work of the latter is both more healthy and requires less skill.

Now, since it is impossible to enter into a calculation of all the shades of these various difficulties, rent, profit, and labour can never form an accurate standard of value.

CAROLINE.

They have at least enabled me to acquire a much

more clear and precise idea of value than I had before.

MRS. B.

Your idea of value is, however, yet far from being complete; for there are, as I have just observed, other circumstances to be considered independently of the cost of production, which materially influence the value of commodities. In a besieged town, for instance, provisions have frequently risen to twenty or thirty times their natural value, and have increased proportionally in price.

CAROLINE.

Their increased price in this case is owing merely to the scarcity, not to any increase of value, for were they as plentiful as usual they would sell at the usual price.

MRS. B.

Their high price is the consequence of their increased value, for they would not only sell for a greater sum of money, but also exchange for a greater quantity of any commodities, except such as are convertible into food.

CAROLINE.

Unless perhaps it were gunpowder, or any kind of ammunition, which in a besieged town might be as much in request as food.

MRS. B.

Certainly; in that case ammunition would rise in value as well as provisions.

Plenty and scarcity are, then, circumstances which considerably affect the value of commodities. Tell me whether you understand the meaning of the words, plenty and scarcity.

CAROLINE.

Yes, surely; when there is a great quantity of any thing, it is said to be plentiful; — when very little, it is scarce.

MRS. B.

If there was very little corn in a desert island, should you say there was a scarcity of corn there?

CAROLINE.

No; because as there would be no one to eat it, none would be wanted; and scarcity implies an insufficiency.

MRS. B.

And when a few years ago there was a scarcity of corn in this country, do you think that the whole of the island produced only a small quantity?

CAROLINE.

No; not positively a small quantity, but a smaller

quantity than was required to supply the whole of the population of the country with bread.

MRS. B.

Plenty and scarcity are therefore relative terms : a scarcity neither implies a small quantity, nor plenty a large one ; but the first implies an insufficiency, or less than is wanted ; the last as much, or perhaps more than is required. When there is plenty, the supply of the commodity being at least equal to the demand, every one who can pay the cost of its production will be able to purchase it. If, on the contrary, the commodity is scarce, some of these must go without it, and the apprehension of this privation produces competition amongst those who are desirous of buying the commodity, and this raises its value above the cost of production.

CAROLINE.

This, then, is the cause of the rise in the price of provisions in a besieged town ?

MRS. B.

Yes ; or during a famine, or in any case of scarcity. Whenever, on the contrary, the supply exceeds the demand, the price will fall below the natural value of the commodity.

You see, therefore, that the *natural value* and *exchangeable value* do not always coincide.

10/11/18  
10/11/18  
10/11/18

CAROLINE.

The exchangeable value appears to me to consist of the natural value, subject either to augmentation or diminution, in proportion as the commodity is scarce or plentiful.

MRS. B.

True; and it is this proportion, that is to say, the proportion of the supply to the demand, which regulates the *market price*.

CAROLINE.

That is very clear: if there are fewer chickens brought to market than are wanted, the supply being inadequate to the demand, the market price will rise; if more than are wanted, the demand exceeds the supply, and the market price will fall.

MRS. B.

There is some little difficulty in forming a clear conception of the meaning of the word *demand*; what do you understand by it?

CAROLINE.

I understand that those who go to market to buy chickens, by offering a price make a demand for them; that if there are more persons wanting to buy chickens than there are chickens to be sold, the demand is greater than the supply; if the contrary, the supply is greater than the demand.



## CONVERSATION XVI.

---

### ON MONEY.

OF THE USE OF MONEY AS A MEDIUM OF EXCHANGE. — OF COINING. — USE OF MONEY AS A STANDARD OF VALUE. — OF THE VARIATION OF THE EXCHANGEABLE VALUE OF GOLD AND SILVER. — IN WHAT MANNER IT AFFECTS THE PRICE OF COMMODITIES. — OF NOMINAL AND REAL CHEAPNESS. — WHAT CLASSES OF PEOPLE ARE AFFECTED BY THE VARIATION IN THE VALUE OF GOLD AND SILVER. — HOW FAR MONEY CONSTITUTES A PART OF THE WEALTH OF A COUNTRY. — OF THE EXPORTATION OF MONEY. — OF THE MEANS BY WHICH THE VALUE OF THE PRECIOUS METALS EQUALISES ITSELF IN ALL PARTS OF THE CIVILISED WORLD.

---

MRS. B.

**H**AVING obtained some knowledge of the nature of value, we may now proceed to examine the use of money.

Without this general medium of exchange, trade could never have made any considerable progress; for as the subdivisions of labour increased, insuperable difficulties would be experienced in the adjustment of accounts. The butcher perhaps would want bread, at a time that the baker did not want meat; or they might each be desirous of exchanging their respective commodities, but these might not be of equal value.

CAROLINE.

It would be very difficult, I believe, at any time to make such reckonings exactly balance each other.

MRS. B.

In order to avoid this inconvenience, it became necessary for every man to be provided with a commodity which would be willingly taken at all times in exchange for goods. Hence arose that useful representative of commodities, *money*, which, being exclusively appropriated to exchanges, every one was ready either to receive or to part with for that purpose.

CAROLINE.

When the baker did not want meat he would take the butcher's money in exchange for his bread, because that money would enable him to obtain from others what he did want.

MRS. B.

Various commodities have been employed to answer the purpose of money. Mr. Salt, in his Travels in Abyssinia, informs us, that wedges of salt are used in that country for small currency, coined money being extremely scarce. A wedge of rock-salt, weighing between two and three pounds, was estimated at 1-30th of a dollar.

CAROLINE.

How extremely inconvenient such a bulky article must be as a substitute for money coined; the carriage of it to any distance would cost almost as much as the salt was worth.

MRS. B.

A commodity of this nature could be used for the purpose of money in those countries only where very few mercantile transactions take place, and where labour is very cheap. Tobacco, shells, and a great variety of other articles, have been used at different times, and in different countries, as mediums of exchange; but nothing has ever been found to answer this end so well as the metals. They are the least perishable of all commodities; they are susceptible, by the process of fusion, of being divided into any number of parts without loss, and being the heaviest, they are the least bulky of all bodies. These properties render them peculiarly

appropriate for the purposes of commerce and circulation.

CAROLINE.

The use of metals as money must be very ancient, for mention is made in history of the iron coin of the Greeks, and the copper coin of the Romans.

MRS. B.

Nor are gold and silver coins of modern date; but they were scarce before the discovery of the American mines. The first gold coins were struck at Rome, about 200 years before Christ. Those of silver about 65 years earlier. Previous to that period the *as*, which was of copper, was the only coin in common use.

CAROLINE.

It is said in the Bible that Abraham gave 400 shekels of silver for the purchase of the field of Machpelah, to bury Sarah in. — Was that, do you suppose, coined money?

MRS. B.

No: I believe there was no coined money of so ancient a date as the time of Abraham. The metals were originally used for the purpose of money in bars; and it is mentioned that Abraham weighed the silver for the purpose; which would have been unnecessary had it been coined. Before

the invention of coining, the use of the metals as a medium of exchange was attended with great inconvenience; it being necessary not only to weigh, but also to assay the metal, to ascertain both its quantity and its degree of purity.

The invention of coining superseded this inconvenience; for coining money is affixing to a piece of metal a particular stamp or impression, which declares that it is of a certain weight and quality. Thus the impression on a guinea signifies that it is a piece of gold of a certain fineness, weighing 107 grains nearly.

CAROLINE.

Money must also be of great use in fixing the value of commodities; before its introduction the butcher and the baker might dispute which was worth most, the joint of meat or the loaf of bread which they wished to exchange.

MRS. B.

Yes; money became useful not only as a medium of exchange, but also as a common measure of value. You will learn hereafter that it is not, any more than labour, a very accurate measure, when the values of one period are compared with the values of another distant period; but for the common purposes of traffic it answers sufficiently well.

Previous to the invention of money, men were much at a loss how to estimate the value of their

property. In order to express that value they were necessarily obliged to compare it to something else, and having no settled standard, they would naturally choose objects of known and established value. Accordingly we read both in Scripture and in the ancient poets, of a man's property being worth so many oxen and so many flocks and herds. Dr. Clarke informs us, that even at the present day, the Calmuc Tartars reckon the value of a coat of mail from six to eight, and up to the value of fifty horses. In civilised countries every one estimates his capital by the quantity of money it is worth ;— he does not really possess the sum in money, but his property, whatever be its nature or kind, is equivalent to such a sum of money. For instance, a man who is worth a capital of 20,000*l.* may perhaps not be possessed of 20*l.* in money ; but his property, whether land or commodities, if sold, would bring him 20,000*l.*

## CAROLINE.

When gold is brought into this country, pray how is it paid for? Something must be given in exchange for it ; and yet that something cannot be money ?

## MRS. B.

Certainly not. A bullion merchant would derive no advantage from a trade in which he would be employed in exchanging a certain weight of gold

and silver in one country, for a similar weight of gold and silver in another country : he would lose not only all the profits of trade, but the expenses of the freight, &c. ; so that in fact he would be exchanging 100*l.* for 90*l.*, or 95*l.*

We pay for gold and silver in woollen cloths, hardware, calicoes, and linens, and a variety of other commodities.

CAROLINE.

Then we purchase gold with goods just as we purchase goods with gold ?

MRS. B.

Exactly ; those who take our goods in exchange for gold bullion, buy goods with gold ; only as the gold is not coined, it may rather be called an exchange of commodities than a purchase.

CAROLINE.

And if the mines should prove less productive than usual, or any circumstance should render gold scarce, and thus raise its exchangeable value, we must export a greater quantity of goods to exchange for the same quantity of gold ?

MRS. B.

Undoubtedly. The natural value of gold bullion, like that of any other commodity, may be estimated by the labour bestowed upon it, both to extract

it from the mines, and bring it to the place where it is to be sold; and its exchangeable value fluctuates according to the proportion of the supply to the demand. This fluctuation, however, can be discovered only by the greater or smaller quantity of goods for which the same quantity of gold will exchange. For as gold and silver may be bought with any kind of goods, they are not susceptible of a standard of value like that of other commodities which is estimated in one particular article—money.

CAROLINE.

As gold and silver are the standard of value of all other commodities, all other commodities, I conceive, must be affected by an alteration in the exchangeable value of gold and silver?

MRS. B.

And this is the reason why money is not an accurate standard of the value of commodities: for if money by its plenty diminish in value, less goods will be given in exchange for it; it therefore enhances the price of commodities, that is to say, their *exchangeable value estimated in money*, and renders them dearer. Whilst if money by its scarcity increase in value, more goods will be given in exchange for it: it therefore lowers the price of commodities, and renders them cheaper,



CAROLINE.

A deficiency of any article raises its exchangeable value, and consequently its price, above its natural value; thus a deficiency of gold or silver would make a smaller quantity exchange for the same quantity of goods as before; and therefore a loaf of bread would sell for less money, or, in other words, would be cheaper.

MRS. B.

Yes; and not only bread, but meat, clothes, furniture, houses; in short, every thing would be cheaper, in consequence of the scarcity of the precious metals.

CAROLINE.

It would appear, then, that a scarcity of money is advantageous to a country by rendering things cheap?

MRS. B.

When the cheapness of commodities arises from that plenty which results from a reduction of the cost of production, it is very advantageous; but not when it proceeds from a scarcity of money. In the latter case, the supply not being increased, commodities are lower in price, without any alteration in their general exchangeable value. They may, therefore, be considered rather as nominally

than really cheaper. If, for instance, a loaf of bread should sell for a penny, though there should not be a single loaf more in the country than when it sold for a shilling, the cheapness would not make bread more plentiful.

CAROLINE.

But if the price of bread were so low as a penny, though the supply should not be increased, the labouring classes would increase their consumption of it so considerably as to produce a scarcity, if not a famine, before the next harvest. This *nominal*, or I would call it *false*, cheapness, must therefore be prejudicial instead of being beneficial to a country.

MRS. B.

The consequence you have drawn from it is erroneous; for the labouring classes would not be able to purchase a greater quantity of bread than usual, owing to the scarcity of money. The wages of labour would not be exempted from the general fall in price which this scarcity would produce: the labourers, as well as the bread they eat, would be paid in pence instead of shillings, and their power of purchasing bread would neither be increased nor diminished.

CAROLINE.

True; I did not consider that. I suppose, then,

that if the contrary case occurred, that is, if the quantity of money were considerably augmented, either by the discovery of a mine in the country, or by any other means, a general rise in the price of commodities would be the consequence.

. MRS. B.

Undoubtedly ; but without producing any scarcity. Therefore, though commodities would rise in price, their value would not be increased, and the commodities being the same in quantity, the public would be equally well supplied ; but as money fell or became depreciated in value from its excess, fewer commodities would be given in exchange for the same sum ; or more money must be paid for the same commodity. A loaf of bread might cost two shillings instead of one, but as the wages of labour would at the same time be doubled, the labourer would suffer no privation from the increase of price. You now see the propriety of making the distinction between the *value* and the *price* of a commodity.

It is very possible for the price of a commodity to rise, whilst its value falls. A loaf of bread may rise in price from one to two shillings ; but money may be so depreciated by excess that *two* shillings may not procure so much meat, butter, and cheese as *one* shilling did before ; therefore a loaf of bread would no longer exchange for so much of those

commodities, and its exchangeable value compared with other things generally, would have fallen ; while its *price*, or exchangeable value estimated in *money only*, would have risen.

CAROLINE.

And when the price alters, how can we distinguish whether it is the goods or the money which change in value ?

MRS. B.

There is no point so difficult to ascertain as a variation of value, because we have no fixed standard measure of value ; neither nature nor art furnishes us with a commodity whose value is incapable of change ; and such alone would afford us an accurate standard of value.

CAROLINE.

How useful such a commodity would be ; for we cannot estimate the value of any thing without comparing it with the value of something else ; and if that something else is liable to variation, it is but of little assistance to us : it is supporting the earth by the elephant, and the elephant by the tortoise ; but we still remain in the same dilemma. When a man says he is worth 500 acres of land, we can form scarcely any judgment of his wealth, unless he tells us what the acres are worth ; his

land may be situated in the most fruitful parts of England, or it may be in the wilds of America, or the deserts of Arabia ; and if he values his land in money, and says my acres are worth, or would sell for 1000*l.*, we can form some notion of their real value, but not an accurate one ; for we do not know what is the real value of the money, whether it is plentiful or scarce, cheap or dear ; nor can we ever learn it unless we had some invariable standard by which to measure it.

MRS. B.

Now supposing money to be depreciated in value 25 per cent., and that the expense of manufacturing a piece of muslin, from some improvement in the process, fell from four to three shillings a-yard, at what price would the muslin sell ?

CAROLINE.

It would retain its original price of four shillings though it would really be cheaper ; for the diminution of the value of money would exactly counter-balance the diminution of the cost of production of the muslin.

MRS. B.

Very well. And if, on the contrary, money should become scarce at the same time as the cost of production of a commodity diminished, then these two causes, acting in conjunction instead of,

opposition, the commodity would be both nominally and really cheaper.

CAROLINE.

The muslin in that case would fall from four to two shillings a-yard.\*

MRS. B.

In order still further to reduce the price of the muslin, we may suppose the supply to exceed the demand, so as to oblige the manufacturer to sell it below its cost of production ; and thus the price might fall so low as one shilling, or even sixpence a-yard.

But of all these reductions of price, that which proceeds from a diminished cost of production is the only one from which general advantage is derived. That arising from the depreciation of money producing merely a nominal cheapness ; and that which results from an excess of supply being decidedly an evil, inasmuch as it creates distress and discourages industry.

CAROLINE.

It appears, then, from what you have said, that an increase or diminution of money in a country does not really affect the pecuniary circumstances of any one?

\* Accurately calculated the muslin would sell for 2s. 3d. a yard, because the rise in the value of money would be reckoned upon the reduced cost of production.

MRS. B.

I beg your pardon ; all classes of men are temporarily affected when the change is abrupt ; because the due level is not immediately ascertained, and until that takes place, the pressure falls unequally. But independently of this, there are many classes of people who would be very sensibly and permanently injured by an alteration in the exchangeable value of money.

Let us suppose, for instance, that the proprietor of a field lets it for a long lease at a rent of 20*l.* a-year ; and that some years afterwards, money having risen in value, and he being in want of hay for his horses, purchases the crop of hay for 15*l.* In this case the landlord will continue to receive 20*l.* a-year for the rent, and yet pay but 15*l.* for the produce, so that the farmer will lose 5*l.*, besides the profits of his capital. Is not this a very serious injury ?

CAROLINE.

No doubt ; and this would be the case with all leases ; for it is immaterial to whom the farmer sells his crops ; if the market-price has fallen, he must be a loser.

MRS. B.

Yes. Were money raised to double its former value, the rent would purchase double the quantity of commodities that it did before ; for 100*l.* in money would exchange for a quantity of goods which

was reckoned worth 200*l.* previous to the alteration; so that rent, though nominally the same, would in reality be doubled, and it would be so much unjustly taken out of the pocket of the tenant to put into that of the landlord.

CAROLINE.

This evil, however, admits of a remedy when a new lease is made? •

MRS. B.

True; but should the old one have several years to run, the farmer may be ruined first; and though it is true that it does not violate any law, it is a manifest infraction of the security of property, which we have observed to be the foundation of all wealth, and the strongest motive for its accumulation. There is not a more active and steady stimulus to industry than the certainty of reaping the fruits of our labour.

CAROLINE.

Then I suppose that when money is depreciated in value, in consequence of being more plentiful, the case would be reversed; the farmer would be benefited and the landlord would be the loser; for the rent would not be really worth so much as it was before?

MRS. B.

Undoubtedly. Another class of people who are



materially affected by an alteration in the value of money, are the unproductive labourers. Their pay is generally a regular stipend, not liable to the same variation as the wages of productive labourers. The pay of the army and navy, of all the officers under government, and of the learned professions, is fixed; those persons must therefore suffer all the evil, or enjoy all the benefit arising from an alteration in the value of money.

CAROLINE.

The higher classes of the unproductive labourers might be able to support the hardship resulting from a depreciation of the value of money; but how can the common sailor or soldier do so? It is absolutely necessary that their pay should enable them to procure a suitable subsistence.

MRS. B.

They are usually paid, partly in money and partly in provisions and clothing, and are not therefore such sufferers by a depreciation of money as they would be if paid entirely in currency. It has nevertheless been found necessary of late to augment the pay of both army and navy.

CAROLINE.

The value of money has then fallen?

MRS. B.

Yes, it has; but I must defer explaining the reason of this fall till our next interview. A third class of people who are considerably injured by a depreciation of the value of money, are those who have lent money at interest for a long period of time, persons who live on annuities, and particularly the stockholders in the public funds. Not only is the interest they receive depreciated, but also the value of their capital. The interest they receive for their stock remains nominally the same, whatever diminution may have taken place in the value of money; and their income being thus apparently stationary, they partake in the general disadvantage of the rise of prices, without being enabled to avail themselves of the compensation arising from the greater abundance of money. Professional men, and all those who receive salaries, have ultimately the remedy of an increase of pay; but the stockholder has no resource: his income wastes away, and he perceives his means of procuring his accustomed enjoyments gradually diminish, without being able to trace the source from whence the evil springs; for as his income remains nominally the same, he is not aware of any diminution of wealth.

CAROLINE.

How very much I have been mistaken in my

idea of money ! Instead of being the only, or at least the principal article which (as I thought) constituted wealth ; it seems, on the contrary, to be the only one which is unworthy of that title, since it does not contribute to the riches of a country. An excess of money renders other things dear ; a deficiency of it makes them cheap ; but it appears to me that a country is not one atom the richer for all the money it possesses. Money, therefore, I think, cannot be called wealth, but merely its representative, like the counters at cards ; and its chief use seems to consist in its affording us a convenient medium of exchange, and a useful, though imperfect standard of value.

MRS. B.

Money cannot with justice be compared to counters, for it is not, like them, a sign or representative of value, but really possesses (or ought to possess) the value for which it exchanges. A bank-note, which has no intrinsic value, is simply a sign of value ; but when you purchase goods for a guinea, you give a piece of gold of equivalent value in exchange.

In order to judge whether money forms any part of the wealth of a nation, let us refer to our definition of wealth. I believe we said that every article, either of utility or luxury, constituted wealth. Now I leave you to judge whether mo-

ney, considered either as a medium of exchange, or as a standard of value, is not eminently useful; since by facilitating the circulation of commodities it indirectly contributes to their multiplication.

CAROLINE.

That is true, certainly, with regard to the money actually required for circulation; but should it exceed that sum, the surplus would be of no value to us.

MRS. B.

The same might be said of a superfluous quantity of any kind of wealth; more tables and chairs, or a greater quantity of gowns and coats than are wanted, would be equally useless, and would equally be depreciated in value.

CAROLINE.

But then we could export such commodities, and exchange them for goods which we did want.

MRS. B.

And why should we not do the same with money? When we have more money than is required for the purpose of circulation, we should export it, by purchasing foreign goods; without this resource, a superfluity of money is perfectly useless, and will no more contribute to the production of wealth,

than a superfluous number of mills would contribute to the production of flour.

CAROLINE.

I had always imagined that the more money a country possessed, the more affluent was its condition.

MRS. B.

And that usually is the case. The error lies in mistaking the cause for the effect. A great quantity of money is necessary to circulate a great quantity of commodities. Rich flourishing countries require abundance of money, and possess the means of obtaining it; but this abundance is the consequence, not the cause of their wealth, which consists in the commodities circulated, rather than in the circulating medium. Specie, we have just said, constitutes wealth, so far as it is required for circulation; but if a country possess one guinea more than is necessary for that purpose, the wealth which purchased that guinea has been thrown away.

CAROLINE.

Yet what a common observation it is, that plenty of money animates the industry of a country, and encourages commerce; and this seems to be proved by the miserable and barbarous state of Europe previous to the discovery of the American mines.

MRS. B.

The discovery of America was certainly a very efficient cause in rousing the industry of Europe from the state of stagnation into which it was sunk by ignorance and barbarism. But had America possessed no mines, I doubt whether the advantages we have derived from our connection with that country would not have been almost equally great: we could easily find a substitute for the specie with which she supplies us, but never for the abundance and variety of wealth which she is incessantly pouring in upon us. The increase of European comforts, of affluence, of luxury, is attributed to the influx of the treasures of the new world — and with reason; but those treasures are the sugar, the coffee, the indigo, the tobacco, the drugs, &c. which America exports, to obtain which we must send her commodities that have been produced by the employment of our poor. Gold and silver, though they have greatly excited our avarice and ambition, have eventually contributed but little to stimulate our industry.

It is not to the multiplication of the precious metals that we are indebted for our improved agriculture, our prosperous commerce, and the variety and excellence of our manufactures; nor do I believe that it was their scarcity which deprived our ancestors of these advantages. It was because they were ignorant and barbarous, and that we are con-

paratively enlightened and civilised; — comparatively I may indeed say, for error is still active in retarding the progress of improvement, and this is no where more evident than in the anxiety of governments to prevent the exportation of specie, although it is now nearly forty years since Adam Smith fully proved the impolicy of this prohibition.

CAROLINE.

If the exportation of specie be prohibited, the only use that can be made of a superfluous quantity of it, is to melt it down and re-convert it into bullion.

MRS. B.

But melting the coin is, in this country, equally illegal. A superfluous quantity of money, therefore, (were these laws never infringed,) would be necessarily added to the circulation, and depreciate the value of the whole.

How different is the situation of a country where no such prohibitory laws exist ! There, no sooner does money accumulate so as to occasion a depreciation of its value, or, in other words, an advance in the price of commodities, than the merchants of that country export specie, and purchase with it foreign goods ; while at the same time foreign merchants send their goods to the country where prices have risen, and exchange them, not for

other goods, which are dear, but for money, which is cheap.

CAROLINE.

That is to say, they will sell, but not purchase?

MRS. B.

Precisely : — it is thus that a country is drained of its superfluous specie ; as this traffic goes on, money rises in value, commodities fall in price, and foreign merchants again exchange their goods for commodities of the country, instead of receiving payment for it in specie.

No apprehension need therefore be entertained of ill consequences arising either from the melting down or exporting the coin of the country. This exportation will take place secretly whenever there is a superfluity, however severe the law may be against it ; the only difference is, that instead of being carried on in an open and regular manner by merchants of respectability, it is thrown into the hands of men of despicable character, who are tempted by extraordinary profits to engage in this illicit traffic.

Could Spain and Portugal, countries which receive all the precious metals imported from America to Europe, have carried into effect the absurd restrictive laws by which they attempted to keep their gold and silver at home, those metals would



eventually have become of little more value to them than lead and copper.

If you have understood what I have said, you will now be able to tell me what effect will be produced in the mercantile transactions of a country, which is not shackled by restrictive laws, when a scarcity of money produces a fall in the price of commodities.

CAROLINE.

In that case the very reverse will happen of what we before observed. Foreign merchants will come and buy goods, and instead of offering merchandise in exchange, will bring money in payment; for they will be willing to make purchases, but not sales at a cheap market.

MRS. B.

It is thus that gold and silver are diffused throughout all parts of the civilised world, wherever there is a deficiency, it flows in from every quarter; and wherever there is a redundancy, the tide sets in an opposite direction. It is the regular diffusion of the precious metals, and their constant tendency to an equality of value, which renders them so peculiarly calculated for a general standard. Were money as liable to variation of value as the commodities for which it serves as a medium of exchange, it would be totally unfit for a standard.

## CONVERSATION XVII.

---

*Subject of MONEY continued.*

OF THE DEPRECIATION OF GOLD AND SILVER. —  
OF THE ADULTERATION AND DEPRECIATION OF  
COINED MONEY. — OF BANKS. — OF PAPER MO-  
NEY. — EFFECTS OF PAPER MONEY WHEN NOT  
PAYABLE IN SPECIE ON DEMAND. — OF THE PRO-  
PORTION OF CURRENCY TO THE COMMODITIES TO  
BE CIRCULATED BY IT.

CAROLINE.

I HAVE been reflecting much upon the subject of our last conversation, Mrs. B.; and it has occurred to me, that though there may be no permanent excess and depreciation of specie in any particular country, yet it must gradually decrease in value throughout the world: for money is very little liable to wear; a great quantity of the precious metals is annually extracted from the mines, and though a considerable portion of it may be converted into plate and jewellery, yet the greater

part, I suppose, goes to the mint to be coined, and this additional quantity must produce a depreciation of value ?

MRS. B.

An increase of supply will not occasion depreciation of value, if there should at the same time be a proportional increase of demand, and we must recollect that the consumable produce of the earth increases as well as that of the mines—the commodities to be circulated as well as the medium of circulation ; and it is not the actual quantity of money, but the proportion which it bears to the quantity of commodities for which it is to serve as a medium of exchange, that regulates the price of those commodities.

Let us suppose the price of a loaf of bread to be one shilling ; and say, if 1000 more loaves of bread be produced every year by agriculture, and such an additional number of shillings be obtained from the mines as will be necessary to circulate them, the price of a loaf will then remain the same, and the value of money will not, by this additional quantity of specie, be depreciated.

CAROLINE.

But, Mrs. B., you do not consider that when the thousand additional loaves are eaten, the additional shillings will remain.

MRS. B.

The greater part of these loaves will be eaten by those who will not only reproduce them, but probably increase the number the following year.

CAROLINE.

In that case it would be very possible that the progress of agriculture and manufactures should keep pace with, or even precede that of the mines.

MRS. B.

If the quantity of the precious metals annually extracted from the mines be exactly what is required for the arts, and for the additional specie necessary to circulate the increasing produce of the land, there will be no change in the value of money, and commodities will continue to be bought and sold at their former prices. If less gold and silver be extracted than is requisite for these purposes, goods will fall in price; and if, on the contrary, a greater quantity be produced, goods will rise in price, the fluctuations in the price of commodities gradually and constantly conforming to the variations of the scale by which their value is measured.

Dr. Adam Smith was of opinion that for many years past the supply of gold and silver did not exceed the demand; but several later writers conceive that he was mistaken on this point. I am very far from being a competent judge of such a

question, but I confess that I feel inclined to favour the opinion of a general depreciation.

Previous to the discovery of America the exchangeable value of money was certainly much greater than it has been since that period. Some notion may be formed of the difference of the value of money in ancient and in modern times from the amount of the revenue which Xerxes, King of Persia, derived from his wealthy and extensive empire, and which enabled him to maintain his mighty fleets and armies ; it is said in history to have amounted to only three millions sterling.

CAROLINE.

The prodigality and extravagance of the Romans was then in fact still greater than it appears, since the immense sums they expended upon luxuries were then more valuable than they would be at the present times.

MRS. B.

As the wealth of the Romans arose in a great measure from the spoliation of the countries they conquered, gold and silver formed an essential part of their plunder ; specie, therefore, might possibly be of less value there than in other parts of the world at the same period.

Independently, however, of the increase of quantity which produces a depreciation in the value of the precious metals themselves, there are causes quite foreign to this, which have considerable effect

on the value of the money into which they have been coined. One of these is the adulteration of the coin. A pound sterling, or twenty shillings, originally weighed a pound of silver; hence its denomination. But sovereigns, in making new coinages, frequently found it convenient to adulterate the metal by mixing it with alloy. It was a means of increasing the value of their treasures, by paying their debts with a much less quantity of the precious metals, and thus defrauding their creditor-subjects, who in the first instance were not aware of the change.

In the year 1351, Edward the Fourth, distressed by the debts he had incurred in his chimerical attempts to conquer France, adopted this mode of paying his creditors with less money than he borrowed of them. He ordered a pound of silver to be coined into 266, instead of 240 pennies. Having experienced the beneficial effects of this expedient, he soon after coined 270 pennies out of the same pound. By this imposition, not only the creditors of the crown, but all other creditors were defrauded of about a tenth of their property; being compelled to receive in payment money of less value than that they had lent. Considerable inconvenience was also experienced from the alteration in the standard of value; as soon as it was discovered, it produced a general rise in the price of commodities, and the poor were greatly distressed by the enhancement of prices of the necessaries of life.

CAROLINE.

But did not wages rise in the same proportion?

MRS. B.

Eventually they did, no doubt; but after such a revolution in prices as an event of this nature produces, a length of time is required to restore the due level; and the rich always resist the rise of wages as long as they can. In the instance I have mentioned it does not appear that the labouring class made any effort to obtain a compensation by a rise of wages, until a dreadful pestilence, which originated in the east, extended its ravages to England, and carried off the greater part of the lower classes. The survivors then took advantage of the scarcity of hands to raise their terms; but the king, instead of allowing the remedy to pursue its natural course, considered this attempt of the labourers to raise their wages as an unwarrantable exaction; and in order to prevent it, enacted the *statute of labourers*. This statute ordained that labourers should receive no more than the wages which were paid previous to the adulteration of the coin.

It would be difficult to conceive a law more calculated to repress the efforts of industry. But Edward, urged by the weight of his accumulated debts, continued to depreciate the value of the coin; endeavouring to conceal the fraud by the introduction of a new silver coin called a *groat*, but in value

only  $3\frac{1}{4}d.$ : and in 1358 he made 75 groats, or 300 pennies, out of a pound of silver.

CAROLINE.

What a prodigious depreciation in the course of so short a period of time! and have similar expedients been resorted to by successive sovereigns?

MRS. B.

Yes; so repeatedly that 20 shillings, or a pound sterling, instead of containing, as formerly, a pound of silver, now weighs rather less than four ounces of that metal.

CAROLINE.

But this is a partial depreciation, which affects only the coin of Great Britain. Have other countries adopted so unjust and pernicious a measure?

MRS. B.

It is so tempting an expedient for sovereigns, that it has been resorted to in almost all countries where money is used. In the time of Charlemagne the French livre weighed a pound, of 12 ounces. Philip the First adulterated it with one-third of alloy. Philip of Valois practised the same fraud on gold coin, and it has been repeated by successive sovereigns till the depreciation of the French livre is even greater than that of our pound sterling, it being now worth not more than ten-pence.



As far back as the time of the Romans this surreptitious mode of obtaining wealth had been discovered, and was practised. The Roman *as*, which originally contained a pound of brass, was in the course of time diminished to half an ounce.

CAROLINE.

But now that the world must be fully aware of the imposition, I should think that governments would not venture to have recourse to such expedients.

MRS. B.

This country has increased so much in wealth, that in the present times less difficulty is experienced in raising taxes; and the facility of making loans has induced government to give the preference to that mode of obtaining money during a time of war, or whenever any extraordinary expenses are incurred.

Of late years a new mode of augmenting the currency of the country has been invented; by substituting for the precious metals a more convenient and more economical medium of exchange, under the form of *paper-money*.

CAROLINE.

Paper-money ! There can be no real value in money made of paper ?

MRS. B.

None whatever intrinsically, yet it has been found to answer most of the purposes of specie. — You remember that money was first invented to avoid the inconvenience of barter. When a commodity is sold for money, it is under a confidence, on the part of the seller, that he will be able with the money to purchase any other commodity of equal value that he may want. It is of no consequence to him of what material the money be made, provided it have this quality.

CAROLINE.

True; but paper can never have that quality; who would part with any thing of value for a bit of paper?

MRS. B.

Suppose I were to give you a paper containing my promise to pay you 100*l.* in money whenever you demanded it; would you not consider the promise so formally given, nearly of the same value as the money itself?

CAROLINE.

Yes; because I have perfect confidence in you: but a stranger would not.

MRS. B.

Suppose that instead of my promise to pay you 100*l.*, I should give you a piece of paper contain-

ing a promise to the same effect of some of the wealthiest and best known merchants in London ?

CAROLINE.

My confidence in the value of such paper would be in proportion to the reliance I could place on the promise of such merchants.

MRS. B.

Exactly so. Such confidence is the foundation of all banking establishments, which are in general a partnership of wealthy and respectable merchants, in whom the public repose so great a confidence that they are willing to take their promissory note, commonly called a *bank-note*, instead of money.

CAROLINE.

A bank-note then is a written engagement, or promise to pay the sum, whatever it be, that is specified in the note ?

MRS. B.

It is ; and these notes become current as a medium of exchange ; having no intrinsic value, they are merely the sign or representative of wealth ; but are received by the public under the persuasion that they will be paid in money by the bank which issues them, whenever it may be required.

CAROLINE.

This is indeed an excellent invention ; what a

saving of expense ! The establishment of a bank of paper-money appears to me very similar to the discovery of a mine of gold in the country : or indeed the bank has even some advantages over the mine, for it is certain of being productive, and yet it is attended with much less expense.

MRS. B.

The saving of capital to a country by the substitution of paper to a metallic currency, is perhaps still greater than you imagine. If, for example, the currency of Great Britain be estimated at twenty millions of sovereigns, and the ordinary rate of profit at 8 per cent., it is evident that this currency costs the country above a million and a half a-year ; for had not the twenty millions been employed as coin, they would have been invested in different branches of industry, and yielded above a million and a half profit. Besides, the loss of coin occasioned by fires, shipwrecks, and other accidents, is very considerable, and requires an annual addition to be made to the stock of currency in order to fill up the void. Thus, you see that it is an expensive luxury for a country to maintain twenty millions of gold in circulation.

CAROLINE.

I am only surprised that facts like these should not have given rise to paper-money long before the

R

present period. Pray, is the invention of paper-money quite of modern date?

MRS. B.

There is, I believe, no vestige of any thing of the kind in ancient history; unless we should consider, as such, a species of stamped leather used as money by the Carthaginians; and as they had also coined money, it is possible that their stamped leather might be considered merely as a sign or representative of real value, analogous to our paper-money.

CAROLINE.

The leather was probably a species of parchment, the substance commonly used for writing on, before the invention of paper, and the impression stamped on it might signify the sum of money which the piece of leather was to represent, or pass for.

MRS. B.

These are points upon which, in the imperfect state of our knowledge of Carthaginian currency, it would be difficult to determine; it is fortunate, therefore, that they are questions more of curiosity than of utility.

The first bank we are distinctly acquainted with was established at Amsterdam in the year 1609\*;

\* It is said, however, that a bank was established at Venice at least two centuries before.

but this institution was of a different kind from what I have been describing. It issued no paper, but received the deposit of coined money, an account of which was taken in the books of the bank and through the medium of these books, transfers of property were made from one individual to another, as occasion required, without the money being once removed from the strong chests in which it was originally deposited.

CAROLINE.

There does not seem to be any economy in this species of bank; whilst those that issue bank-notes, by the substitution of a cheap circulating medium, render that of gold and silver superfluous, and enable it to be sent abroad to purchase foreign commodities.

MRS. B.

And, should foreign countries adopt the same economical expedient, and send us their superfluous specie . . . . ?

CAROLINE.

True, I did not consider that. If paper money were generally adopted, every country would be overstocked with specie; for though the establishment of a bank in any one country may force the superfluous money into others, this cannot happen if banks are set up in every country. They

are far, therefore, from being attended with the advantages I at first imagined.

MRS. B.

By issuing paper-money, so much is, in fact, added to the circulation throughout the civilised world; and inasmuch as it supersedes the use of the precious metals, and therefore lessens the demand, it must to a certain degree lessen their value. The immediate effect of opening a new bank is certainly to drive some portion of the specie out of the country in which the bank is established. It does not however, force out the whole quantity which the paper represents, for independently of the general excess to which we have alluded, a bank must keep a certain quantity of specie in reserve to be enabled to fulfil the promise of paying its notes on demand.

CAROLINE.

You do not mean to say that a bank will keep a fund of specie, like that of Amsterdam, equal to the value of its notes, for that purpose; for if so, no saving would result from the use of paper-money?

MRS. B.

Certainly not. The profits of the bank arise from the employment of the capital thus saved, which consists of the difference between the amount of notes issued and the specie reserved in the bank.

It is so improbable that every person possessed of notes should apply at once for payment, that there is no necessity for providing a fund equal to the amount of the notes in circulation in order to fulfil the engagement. Banks discover from experience what is the proportion of specie requisite to enable them to answer the average demand made upon them; and they regulate the quantity of notes they issue accordingly: for if they failed in their engagement to pay them in cash on demand, they would become bankrupt.

CAROLINE.

Yet I understand that a few years since the Bank of England did not pay its notes in specie?

MRS. B.

That is true; but it was owing to an act of parliament having been passed purposely to grant this privilege to the Bank of England for a specified time.

CAROLINE.

And when a Bank of England note could no longer be exchanged at pleasure for specie, in what did its value consist?

MRS. B.

In the expectation that it would one day be paid in specie: this opinion rendered bank-notes still



current : had such confidence been destroyed, their value would have been reduced to that of the paper of which they are made.

CAROLINE.

But when the Bank of England was not obliged to pay its notes in cash, it was at liberty to issue any quantity however great. In short, it seems to have discovered the philosopher's stone, for though it may not have found the means of making gold, it possessed a substitute which answered the purpose equally well.

MRS. B.

Excepting, that having no intrinsic value, it cannot be exported in case of excess ; and you may recollect our observing, that no use could be made of any superfluous quantity of money but to exchange it for foreign goods. An excess of currency produced by an over-issue of bank-notes must therefore remain in the country, and cause a depreciation in the value of money, which would be discovered by a general rise in the prices of commodities, and would be attended with all the evils enumerated in our last conversation.

CAROLINE.

And is there not great danger of a bank issuing an excess of notes when it is not restricted by the obligation of paying them in specie ?

MRS. B.

A very considerable risk is certainly incurred by such an exemption.

When a bank issues more notes than are required for the purpose of circulation, its effect in depreciating the value of the currency, and raising the price of commodities, is at first very trifling, because as soon as that effect is perceived, the coined money begins to disappear. Notwithstanding the prohibition of law, it never fails to make its escape out of the country. It is either clandestinely sent abroad, or privately melted, and exported in bullion. As long, therefore, as an over-issue of notes serves to replace the coin which it forces out of the country, there is but little augmentation of the circulating medium; but if after the specie has disappeared, the bank still continue to force an additional quantity of notes into circulation, the excess will be absorbed in it, the value of the currency will be proportionally depreciated, and a corresponding rise will take place in the price of commodities.

CAROLINE.

But is it known whether the Bank of England materially increased its issue of notes when it was exonerated from the obligation of paying them in cash?

MRS. B.

Of that there is no doubt; but it is the opinion

of some people that the supply of notes did not exceed the demand; — that the paper-mine (as you call it) increased its produce only in proportion to the increase of the produce of the country, and the peculiar exigencies of the times, political circumstances having deranged the natural order of things, and rendered, during the late revolutions of Europe, a more than usual quantity of currency necessary.

CAROLINE.

But was it not during the late war that all our gold coin disappeared, and was supposed to be melted down or exported? And was there not a general rise in the price of provisions and commodities at the same period?

MRS. B.

That is true; and the question has been very much disputed whether these circumstances were owing to the war, and the taxes it entailed upon us, or to an over-issue of bank-notes. England was under the necessity of paying her troops on the Continent, and of subsidising foreign sovereigns; and the opinion was maintained by many people that this was a sufficient reason to account for the disappearance of our specie, and to render an additional issue of bank-notes necessary.

But the strongest argument in favour of a depreciation of the currency is, that guineas no longer passed for the same value as gold bullion, which is the natural standard of the value of coined money.

CAROLINE.

Has the gold then been adulterated, and an ounce of gold coined into more than 3*l.* 17*s.* 10½*d.*?

MRS. B.

No; but gold bullion partook of the general rise of commodities, and instead of selling for 3*l.* 17*s.* 10½*d.*, it sold for above 4*l.*, and even once was as high as 5*l.* an ounce.

CAROLINE.

But why did not guineas rise in the same proportion? I cannot conceive how they can be less valuable than a similar weight of the gold of which they are made.

MRS. B.

The coined and the uncoined gold remained in reality of the same value, but as it is not lawful to pass a guinea for more than a pound-note and a shilling, the guineas were compelled to share the fate of the paper-currency; and if that was depreciated, all the coined money of the country, whether gold or silver, must have been so likewise.

ing a promise to the same effect of some of the wealthiest and best known merchants in London ?

CAROLINE.

My confidence in the value of such paper would be in proportion to the reliance I could place on the promise of such merchants.

MRS. B.

Exactly so. Such confidence is the foundation of all banking establishments, which are in general a partnership of wealthy and respectable merchants, in whom the public repose so great a confidence that they are willing to take their promissory note, commonly called a *bank-note*, instead of money.

CAROLINE.

A bank-note then is a written engagement, or promise to pay the sum, whatever it be, that is specified in the note ?

MRS. B.

It is ; and these notes become current as a medium of exchange ; having no intrinsic value, they are merely the sign or representative of wealth ; but are received by the public under the persuasion that they will be paid in money by the bank which issues them, whenever it may be required.

CAROLINE.

This is indeed an excellent invention ; what a

saving of expense ! The establishment of a bank of paper-money appears to me very similar to the discovery of a mine of gold in the country : or indeed the bank has even some advantages over the mine, for it is certain of being productive, and yet it is attended with much less expense.

MRS. B.

The saving of capital to a country by the substitution of paper to a metallic currency, is perhaps still greater than you imagine. If, for example, the currency of Great Britain be estimated at twenty millions of sovereigns, and the ordinary rate of profit at 8 per cent., it is evident that this currency costs the country above a million and a half a-year ; for had not the twenty millions been employed as coin, they would have been invested in different branches of industry, and yielded above a million and a half profit. Besides, the loss of coin occasioned by fires, shipwrecks, and other accidents, is very considerable, and requires an annual addition to be made to the stock of currency in order to fill up the void. Thus, you see that it is an expensive luxury for a country to maintain twenty millions of gold in circulation.

CAROLINE.

I am only surprised that facts like these should not have given rise to paper-money long before the

R

MRS. B.

By no means. The same guinea or bank-note will serve the purpose of transferring from one individual to another several hundred pounds' worth of goods in the course of a short time. There are besides many expedients for economising money, the most remarkable of which is an arrangement made amongst bankers. Their clerks meet every day after the hours of business to exchange the draughts made on each other for the preceding day. If, for instance, the banking-house A. has draughts to the amount of 20,000*l.* on the banking-house B., the latter has also, in all probability, draughts upon the former, though they may not be to the same amount; the two houses exchange these draughts as far as they will balance each other, and the necessity of providing money for the payment of the whole is thus obviated. By this economical expedient, which is carried on amongst all the bankers in London east of St. Paul's, I understand that about 200,000*l.* performs the function of four or five millions.

CAROLINE.

And what do you suppose to be the proportion of the money to the value of the commodities to be circulated by it?

MRS. B.

That, I believe, it would be impossible to ascer-

tain. Mr. Sismondi, in his valuable Treatise on Commercial Wealth, compares these respective quantities to mechanical powers, which, though of different weights, balance each other from the equality of their momentum ; and, to follow up the comparison, he observes that though commodities are by far the most considerable in quantity, yet that the velocity with which currency circulates, compensates for its deficiency.

CAROLINE.

This is an extremely ingenious comparison, and I should suppose the analogy to be perfectly correct ; for the less money there is in circulation the more frequently it will be transferred from one to another in exchange for goods.

MRS. B.

Perfectly correct is rather too strong a term. The analogy will only bear to a certain extent, otherwise, whatever were the proportions of currency and of commodities, they would always balance each other, and the price of commodities would never be affected by the increase or diminution of the quantity of currency.



are far, therefore, from being attended with the advantages I at first imagined.

MRS. B.

By issuing paper-money, so much is, in fact, added to the circulation throughout the civilised world; and inasmuch as it supersedes the use of the precious metals, and therefore lessens the demand, it must to a certain degree lessen their value. The immediate effect of opening a new bank is certainly to drive some portion of the specie out of the country in which the bank is established. It does not however, force out the whole quantity which the paper represents, for independently of the general excess to which we have alluded, a bank must keep a certain quantity of specie in reserve to be enabled to fulfil the promise of paying its notes on demand.

CAROLINE.

You do not mean to say that a bank will keep a fund of specie, like that of Amsterdam, equal to the value of its notes, for that purpose; for if so, no saving would result from the use of paper-money?

MRS. B.

Certainly not. The profits of the bank arise from the employment of the capital thus saved, which consists of the difference between the amount of notes issued and the specie reserved in the bank.

It is so improbable that every person possessed of notes should apply at once for payment, that there is no necessity for providing a fund equal to the amount of the notes in circulation in order to fulfil the engagement. Banks discover from experience what is the proportion of specie requisite to enable them to answer the average demand made upon them; and they regulate the quantity of notes they issue accordingly: for if they failed in their engagement to pay them in cash on demand, they would become bankrupt.

CAROLINE.

Yet I understand that a few years since the Bank of England did not pay its notes in specie?

MRS. B.

That is true; but it was owing to an act of parliament having been passed purposely to grant this privilege to the Bank of England for a specified time.

CAROLINE.

And when a Bank of England note could no longer be exchanged at pleasure for specie, in what did its value consist?

MRS. B.

In the expectation that it would one day be paid in specie: this opinion rendered bank-notes still

current : had such confidence been destroyed, their value would have been reduced to that of the paper of which they are made.

CAROLINE.

But when the Bank of England was not obliged to pay its notes in cash, it was at liberty to issue any quantity however great. In short, it seems to have discovered the philosopher's stone, for though it may not have found the means of making gold, it possessed a substitute which answered the purpose equally well.

MRS. B.

Excepting, that having no intrinsic value, it cannot be exported in case of excess ; and you may recollect our observing, that no use could be made of any superfluous quantity of money but to exchange it for foreign goods. An excess of currency produced by an over-issue of bank-notes must therefore remain in the country, and cause a depreciation in the value of money, which would be discovered by a general rise in the prices of commodities, and would be attended with all the evils enumerated in our last conversation.

CAROLINE.

And is there not great danger of a bank issuing an excess of notes when it is not restricted by the obligation of paying them in specie ?

MRS. B.

A very considerable risk is certainly incurred by such an exemption.

When a bank issues more notes than are required for the purpose of circulation, its effect in depreciating the value of the currency, and raising the price of commodities, is at first very trifling, because as soon as that effect is perceived, the coined money begins to disappear. Notwithstanding the prohibition of law, it never fails to make its escape out of the country. It is either clandestinely sent abroad, or privately melted, and exported in bullion. As long, therefore, as an over-issue of notes serves to replace the coin which it forces out of the country, there is but little augmentation of the circulating medium; but if after the specie has disappeared, the bank still continue to force an additional quantity of notes into circulation, the excess will be absorbed in it, the value of the currency will be proportionally depreciated, and a corresponding rise will take place in the price of commodities.

CAROLINE.

But is it known whether the Bank of England materially increased its issue of notes when it was exonerated from the obligation of paying them in cash?

MRS. B.

Of that there is no doubt; but it is the opinion

its cottons merely within its own precincts and environs, instead of supplying, as it now does, not only the demand of all England, but even that of the most remote provinces of America.

Trade encourages industry, in the second place, by rendering commodities cheaper. The merchant, by dealing in large quantities, is enabled to bring goods to market at a less expense of conveyance, and can therefore afford to sell them on lower terms than if the consumer were obliged to send for them to the places where they are produced.

CAROLINE.

Yet things may generally be bought at the lowest price where they are produced or manufactured?

MRS. B.

True; but if you add the charges of a private conveyance, they will cost you much dearer. Had we no means of procuring coals, than by sending a waggon to Newcastle, though we should pay less for them there than in London, they would, from the expense of carriage, cost us more. Merchants who deal in large quantities have a regular system of conveyance for their goods, which considerably diminishes the charges. The coals are by them transported in ships to the different sea-ports, and thence conveyed in barges to the inland parts of the country wherever water-carriage is practicable.

## CAROLINE.

It would, to be sure, not only be very expensive, but extremely inconvenient, were we obliged to send to distant parts for the commodities they produce. If, for instance, it were necessary to send to Sheffield to purchase a set of knives and forks; to Leeds for a coat, and to Norwich for a shawl;—or, without going so far, were it requisite to send into the country for corn, meat, hay, in short, every thing which the country produces, these things would cost us much more than if we bought them of shopkeepers.

But admitting that trade, by facilitating the distribution of commodities, and rendering them cheaper, promotes their consumption, I cannot understand how that can conduce to the wealth of a country: it increases its comforts and enjoyments, but it seems to me to encourage expenditure rather than production.

## MRS. B.

It would be rather difficult to encourage the one independently of the other, unless you could purchase what has not been produced. To increase the comforts and enjoyments of a country is the ultimate aim of national wealth, and it is only by augmenting these productions that we can increase the enjoyment of them. Now whilst

MRS. B.

By no means. The same guinea or bank-note will serve the purpose of transferring from one individual to another several hundred pounds' worth of goods in the course of a short time. There are besides many expedients for economising money, the most remarkable of which is an arrangement made amongst bankers. Their clerks meet every day after the hours of business to exchange the draughts made on each other for the preceding day. If, for instance, the banking-house A. has draughts to the amount of 20,000*l.* on the banking-house B., the latter has also, in all probability, draughts upon the former, though they may not be to the same amount; the two houses exchange these draughts as far as they will balance each other, and the necessity of providing money for the payment of the whole is thus obviated. By this economical expedient, which is carried on amongst all the bankers in London east of St. Paul's, I understand that about 200,000*l.* performs the function of four or five millions.

CAROLINE.

And what do you suppose to be the proportion of the money to the value of the commodities to be circulated by it?

MRS. B.

That, I believe, it would be impossible to ascer-

tain. Mr. Sismondi, in his valuable Treatise on Commercial Wealth, compares these respective quantities to mechanical powers, which, though of different weights, balance each other from the equality of their momentum ; and, to follow up the comparison, he observes that though commodities are by far the most considerable in quantity, yet that the velocity with which currency circulates, compensates for its deficiency.

CAROLINE.

This is an extremely ingenious comparison, and I should suppose the analogy to be perfectly correct ; for the less money there is in circulation the more frequently it will be transferred from one to another in exchange for goods.

MRS. B.

Perfectly correct is rather too strong a term. The analogy will only bear to a certain extent, otherwise, whatever were the proportions of currency and of commodities, they would always balance each other, and the price of commodities would never be affected by the increase or diminution of the quantity of currency.



## CONVERSATION XVIII.

---

### ON COMMERCE.

DIFFERENCE OF WHOLESALE AND RETAIL TRADE.  
— GENERAL ADVANTAGES OF TRADE. — HOW IT  
ENRICHES A COUNTRY. — ADVANTAGES OF RETAIL  
TRADE. — GREAT PROFITS OF SMALL CAPITALS  
EXPLAINED. — ADVANTAGES OF QUICK RETURN  
OF CAPITAL TO FARMERS AND MANUFACTURERS.  
— ADVANTAGES OF ROADS, CANALS, &c. — DIF-  
FERENCE OF THE HOME TRADE, FOREIGN TRADE,  
AND CARRYING TRADE. — OF THE HOME TRADE :  
IT RETURNS CAPITAL QUICKER.

---

MRS. B.

**W**E mentioned commerce as one of the modes of employing capital to produce a revenue; but deferred investigating its effects until you had acquired some knowledge of the nature and use of money. We may now, therefore, proceed to ex-

amine in what manner commerce enriches individuals, and augments the wealth of a country.

Those who engage their capitals in commerce or trade, act as agents or middle-men between the producers and the consumers of the fruits of the earth ; they purchase them of the former, and sell them to the latter ; and it is by the profits on the sale that capital so employed yields a revenue.

There are two distinct sets of men engaged in trade : — merchants, who purchase commodities (either in a rude or a manufactured state) of those who produce them, — this is called wholesale trade ; and shopkeepers, who purchase goods in smaller quantities of the merchants, and distribute them to the public according to the demand, — this constitutes the retail trade.

CAROLINE.

Trade will no doubt bring a revenue to those who employ their capital in it ; but I do not conceive how it contributes to the wealth of the country : for neither merchants nor shopkeepers produce any thing new ; they add nothing to the general stock of wealth, but merely distribute that which is produced by others. It is true, that mercantile men form a considerable part of the community ; but if their profits are taken out of the pockets of their countrymen, they may make fortunes without enriching their country.

MRS. B.

Trade increases the wealth of a nation, not immediately by raising produce, like agriculture, nor by working up raw materials, like manufactures; but it gives an additional value to commodities by bringing them from places where they are plentiful to those where they are scarce; it enables us to procure what we want more in exchange for what we want less; and by providing the means of a more extended distribution of commodities, it gives a spur to the industry both of the agricultural and manufacturing classes. It would be impossible, you know, for every town or district to produce the several kinds of commodities required for its consumption; different soils and climates, and various species of skill and industry are requisite for that purpose. Some lands are best calculated for corn, others for pasture; some towns are celebrated for their cotton manufactures, others for their woollen cloths. Every place has, therefore, an excess of some kind of commodities, and a deficiency of others; which renders a system of exchanges necessary, not only between individuals (as we observed in treating of the origin of barter), but between towns and countries to the most distant regions of the earth.

Now it is the business of merchants to exchange the surplus produce of one place for that of another. A man who deals in any particular com-

modity makes it his business to find out in what parts that commodity is most abundant and will be sold at the lowest price ; and in what parts it is most scarce, and will fetch the highest price, and then to ascertain the least expensive mode of conveying it from the one to the other market.

1

CAROLINE.

In this they consult their own interest ; since to purchase at the cheapest, and sell at the dearest market, will give them the greatest profits.

MRS. B.

No doubt ; but it is wisely and beneficially ordained by Providence, that in consulting their own interest they are at the same time favouring that of the community. When merchants hasten to send their goods to a market where they will sell at a high price, they supply those who are in want of such goods : the higher the price, the more urgent is the demand : it is a deficiency that has rendered them dear, and by furnishing the market with an ample supply, merchants not only satisfy the wants of the purchasers, but ultimately lower the price of the commodity.

Do you think that manufacturers would be able to dispose of an equal quantity of goods without the intervention of mercantile men ? In such a case Manchester would be reduced to distribute

its cottons merely within its own precincts and environs, instead of supplying, as it now does, not only the demand of all England, but even that of the most remote provinces of America.

Trade encourages industry, in the second place, by rendering commodities cheaper. The merchant, by dealing in large quantities, is enabled to bring goods to market at a less expense of conveyance, and can therefore afford to sell them on lower terms than if the consumer were obliged to send for them to the places where they are produced.

CAROLINE.

Yet things may generally be bought at the lowest price where they are produced or manufactured ?

MRS. B.

True ; but if you add the charges of a private conveyance, they will cost you much dearer. Had we no means of procuring coals, than by sending a waggon to Newcastle, though we should pay less for them there than in London, they would, from the expense of carriage, cost us more. Merchants who deal in large quantities have a regular system of conveyance for their goods, which considerably diminishes the charges. The coals are by them transported in ships to the different sea-ports, and thence conveyed in barges to the inland parts of the country wherever water-carriage is practicable.

## CAROLINE.

It would, to be sure, not only be very expensive, but extremely inconvenient, were we obliged to send to distant parts for the commodities they produce. If, for instance, it were necessary to send to Sheffield to purchase a set of knives and forks; to Leeds for a coat, and to Norwich for a shawl;—or, without going so far, were it requisite to send into the country for corn, meat, hay, in short, every thing which the country produces, these things would cost us much more than if we bought them of shopkeepers.

But admitting that trade, by facilitating the distribution of commodities, and rendering them cheaper, promotes their consumption, I cannot understand how that can conduce to the wealth of a country: it increases its comforts and enjoyments, but it seems to me to encourage expenditure rather than production.

## MRS. B.

It would be rather difficult to encourage the one independently of the other, unless you could purchase what has not been produced. To increase the comforts and enjoyments of a country is the ultimate aim of national wealth, and it is only by augmenting these productions that we can increase the enjoyment of them. Now whilst

trade promotes consumption, by rendering commodities cheaper, it encourages industry in the producer, to augment the supply. A reduction of price brings a commodity within the reach of a greater number of persons, which increases the demand for it; the man who could afford to wear only a linen frock, will, when commodities are cheaper, be able to wear a coat. He who could allow himself but one coat in the year, can now without extravagance wear two.

This increasing demand for commodities stimulates the industry of the farmer and manufacturer, and they enrich themselves by furnishing the requisite supplies. With their wealth their consumption also augments; for the wants of men increase with their means of satisfying them; and when they add to their income, they usually add also to their expenditure. The farmer has more to satisfy the desires of the manufacturer; and the manufacturer produces more to supply the demands of the farmer: so that each is enabled to give and receive a greater quantity of things in exchange. These exchanges, it is true, are made through the agency of merchants, and by the means of money, but they are effectually exchanges of commodities, as really as if the manufacturer supplied the farmer with clothing in exchange for provisions. The increase of saleable commodities affects in a similar manner all classes of people. The proprietor of land improves

his fortune by the increasing value of his rents, which the prosperous state of agriculture enables the farmer to pay; and the labourer betters his condition by the rise in the rate of wages resulting from the increased demand for labour. The whole may be summed up by saying, that the quantity of commodities being increased, a larger portion will fall to the lot of every consumer who has any share in their production.

## CAROLINE.

I now begin to understand the general advantages resulting from commerce. The retail trade carried on by shopkeepers must be attended with the same happy effects. It would be extremely inconvenient to the rich, and impracticable for the poor, to purchase the commodities they wanted in such large quantities as are disposed of by merchants and wholesale dealers. Were there no such trade as a butcher, for instance, every family would be obliged to purchase a whole sheep or a whole ox of the farmer.

## MRS. B.

Retail trade is one of the most useful subdivisions of labour. Nothing can be more desirable than that the poor, who are maintained by daily or weekly wages, should be able to purchase their provisions in as small quantities as possible.



MRS. B.

By no means. The same guinea or bank-note will serve the purpose of transferring from one individual to another several hundred pounds' worth of goods in the course of a short time. There are besides many expedients for economising money, the most remarkable of which is an arrangement made amongst bankers. Their clerks meet every day after the hours of business to exchange the draughts made on each other for the preceding day. If, for instance, the banking-house A. has draughts to the amount of 20,000*l.* on the banking-house B., the latter has also, in all probability, draughts upon the former, though they may not be to the same amount; the two houses exchange these draughts as far as they will balance each other, and the necessity of providing money for the payment of the whole is thus obviated. By this economical expedient, which is carried on amongst all the bankers in London east of St. Paul's, I understand that about 200,000*l.* performs the function of four or five millions.

CAROLINE.

And what do you suppose to be the proportion of the money to the value of the commodities to be circulated by it?

MRS. B.

That, I believe, it would be impossible to ascer-

tain. Mr. Sismondi, in his valuable Treatise on Commercial Wealth, compares these respective quantities to mechanical powers, which, though of different weights, balance each other from the equality of their momentum ; and, to follow up the comparison, he observes that though commodities are by far the most considerable in quantity, yet that the velocity with which currency circulates, compensates for its deficiency.

CAROLINE.

This is an extremely ingenious comparison, and I should suppose the analogy to be perfectly correct ; for the less money there is in circulation the more frequently it will be transferred from one to another in exchange for goods.

MRS. B.

Perfectly correct is rather too strong a term. The analogy will only bear to a certain extent, otherwise, whatever were the proportions of currency and of commodities, they would always balance each other, and the price of commodities would never be affected by the increase or diminution of the quantity of currency.

## CONVERSATION XVIII.

---

### ON COMMERCE.

DIFFERENCE OF WHOLESALE AND RETAIL TRADE.  
— GENERAL ADVANTAGES OF TRADE. — HOW IT  
ENRICHES A COUNTRY. — ADVANTAGES OF RETAIL  
TRADE. — GREAT PROFITS OF SMALL CAPITALS  
EXPLAINED. — ADVANTAGES OF QUICK RETURN  
OF CAPITAL TO FARMERS AND MANUFACTURERS.  
— ADVANTAGES OF ROADS, CANALS, &c. — DIF-  
FERENCE OF THE HOME TRADE, FOREIGN TRADE,  
AND CARRYING TRADE. — OF THE HOME TRADE :  
IT RETURNS CAPITAL QUICKER.

---

MRS. B.

**W**E mentioned commerce as one of the modes of employing capital to produce a revenue; but deferred investigating its effects until you had acquired some knowledge of the nature and use of money. We may now, therefore, proceed to ex-

amine in what manner commerce enriches individuals, and augments the wealth of a country.

Those who engage their capitals in commerce or trade, act as agents or middle-men between the producers and the consumers of the fruits of the earth ; they purchase them of the former, and sell them to the latter ; and it is by the profits on the sale that capital so employed yields a revenue.

There are two distinct sets of men engaged in trade : — merchants, who purchase commodities (either in a rude or a manufactured state) of those who produce them, — this is called wholesale trade ; and shopkeepers, who purchase goods in smaller quantities of the merchants, and distribute them to the public according to the demand, — this constitutes the retail trade.

#### CAROLINE.

Trade will no doubt bring a revenue to those who employ their capital in it ; but I do not conceive how it contributes to the wealth of the country : for neither merchants nor shopkeepers produce any thing new ; they add nothing to the general stock of wealth, but merely distribute that which is produced by others. It is true, that mercantile men form a considerable part of the community ; but if their profits are taken out of the pockets of their countrymen, they may make fortunes without enriching their country.

MRS. B.

Trade increases the wealth of a nation, not immediately by raising produce, like agriculture, nor by working up raw materials, like manufactures; but it gives an additional value to commodities by bringing them from places where they are plentiful to those where they are scarce; it enables us to procure what we want more in exchange for what we want less; and by providing the means of a more extended distribution of commodities, it gives a spur to the industry both of the agricultural and manufacturing classes. It would be impossible, you know, for every town or district to produce the several kinds of commodities required for its consumption; different soils and climates, and various species of skill and industry are requisite for that purpose. Some lands are best calculated for corn, others for pasture; some towns are celebrated for their cotton manufactures, others for their woollen cloths. Every place has, therefore, an excess of some kind of commodities, and a deficiency of others; which renders a system of exchanges necessary, not only between individuals (as we observed in treating of the origin of barter), but between towns and countries to the most distant regions of the earth.

Now it is the business of merchants to exchange the surplus produce of one place for that of another. A man who deals in any particular com-

modity makes it his business to find out in what parts that commodity is most abundant and will be sold at the lowest price ; and in what parts it is most scarce, and will fetch the highest price, and then to ascertain the least expensive mode of conveying it from the one to the other market.

1

CAROLINE.

In this they consult their own interest ; since to purchase at the cheapest, and sell at the dearest market, will give them the greatest profits.

MRS. B.

No doubt ; but it is wisely and beneficially ordained by Providence, that in consulting their own interest they are at the same time favouring that of the community. When merchants hasten to send their goods to a market where they will sell at a high price, they supply those who are in want of such goods : the higher the price, the more urgent is the demand : it is a deficiency that has rendered them dear, and by furnishing the market with an ample supply, merchants not only satisfy the wants of the purchasers, but ultimately lower the price of the commodity.

Do you think that manufacturers would be able to dispose of an equal quantity of goods without the intervention of mercantile men ? In such a case Manchester would be reduced to distribute

its cottons merely within its own precincts and environs, instead of supplying, as it now does, not only the demand of all England, but even that of the most remote provinces of America.

Trade encourages industry, in the second place, by rendering commodities cheaper. The merchant, by dealing in large quantities, is enabled to bring goods to market at a less expense of conveyance, and can therefore afford to sell them on lower terms than if the consumer were obliged to send for them to the places where they are produced.

CAROLINE.

Yet things may generally be bought at the lowest price where they are produced or manufactured?

MRS. B.

True; but if you add the charges of a private conveyance, they will cost you much dearer. Had we no means of procuring coals, than by sending a waggon to Newcastle, though we should pay less for them there than in London, they would, from the expense of carriage, cost us more. Merchants who deal in large quantities have a regular system of conveyance for their goods, which considerably diminishes the charges. The coals are by them transported in ships to the different sea-ports, and thence conveyed in barges to the inland parts of the country wherever water-carriage is practicable.

## CAROLINE.

It would, to be sure, not only be very expensive, but extremely inconvenient, were we obliged to send to distant parts for the commodities they produce. If, for instance, it were necessary to send to Sheffield to purchase a set of knives and forks; to Leeds for a coat, and to Norwich for a shawl;—or, without going so far, were it requisite to send into the country for corn, meat, hay, in short, every thing which the country produces, these things would cost us much more than if we bought them of shopkeepers.

But admitting that trade, by facilitating the distribution of commodities, and rendering them cheaper, promotes their consumption, I cannot understand how that can conduce to the wealth of a country: it increases its comforts and enjoyments, but it seems to me to encourage expenditure rather than production.

## MRS. B.

It would be rather difficult to encourage the one independently of the other, unless you could purchase what has not been produced. To increase the comforts and enjoyments of a country is the ultimate aim of national wealth, and it is only by augmenting these productions that we can increase the enjoyment of them. Now whilst



each family for liberty to use this water, and the landlord thought it necessary to make many apologies for not allowing it them free of expense, and talked much of the money he had laid out in the enterprise. My father assured him that he was convinced the speculation was still more beneficial to the village than it was to himself; that as the inhabitants had the option of fetching water for themselves, the payment proved that it was because they could turn the time and labour they bestowed on the conveyance of water to better account; and upon enquiry we found the village had been in an improving state ever since the erection of this fountain. It had not only become more opulent, but had acquired habits of cleanliness, which had proved very beneficial to the health of the people.

MRS. B.

There are three species of commerce in which merchants engage their capitals. The *home trade*, *foreign trade*, and the *carrying trade*.

The home trade comprehends all the internal and coasting trade of a country. The foreign trade is that in which we exchange our commodities for those of foreign countries; and the carrying trade consists in conveying the commodities of one foreign country to another. Let us at present confine our observations to the home trade.

CAROLINE.

The home trade, I conclude, must be the most advantageous to the country, because it encourages the industry of our own people.

MRS. B.

But what difference can it make whether our labourers are employed to work for us, or for foreigners? For if we export English goods, we receive an equal amount of foreign goods in exchange; so that foreign labourers work equally for us in return.

The only advantage of the home trade is that it usually affords a quicker return of capital, which is a further means of promoting industry. The nearer is the market at which the merchant disposes of his goods, the sooner will his capital be returned to him, and the sooner will he be able to take other goods from the hands of the farmer or manufacturer. If a London merchant trades with Sheffield or Manchester, his capital may be returned to him in the course of a few weeks; if with America or the East-Indies, it may be a year or two, or more, before he gets it back. The greater the vicinity of the market, therefore, the greater the number of sales and purchases he will be able to make in a given time. A capital of 1000*l.*, for instance, might in the home trade be returned once a month, and enable the merchant, during

the course of the year, to purchase 12,000*l.* worth of goods; whilst, if he sent his merchandise to India, two years would probably elapse before he got his capital returned. In the first case, therefore, the 1000*l.* capital would afford twenty-four times more encouragement to industry than it would in the latter.

CAROLINE.

You do not thence mean to infer, that in the first case the profits would be twenty-four times greater?

MRS. B.

Certainly not. Competition is, you know, perpetually tending to equalise the profits of capital, in whatever way it is employed. Profits will consequently be proportioned to the slow return of capital; and must, therefore, be reckoned annually, and not calculated upon every time the capital is returned.

CAROLINE.

The period of the return of capital applies, then, not so much to the home or foreign trade, as to the distance of the market; for capital might be returned quicker in trading with Calais or Dunkirk than with Edinburgh and Cork?

MRS. B.

It is very true; and how much is it to be regretted that jealousies and dissensions should so

frequently impede and restrict the trade between neighbouring nations, which would otherwise be carried on with such great and reciprocal advantage ! But we shall reserve till our next interview the observations we have to make on foreign trade.

## CONVERSATION XIX.

---

### ON FOREIGN TRADE.

ADVANTAGES OF FOREIGN TRADE. — IT EMPLOYS  
THE SURPLUS OF CAPITAL, AND DISPOSES OF A  
SURPLUS OF COMMODITIES. — OF BOUNTIES. —  
EFFECTS OF RESTRICTIONS ON FOREIGN TRADE.  
— EXTRACT FROM SAY'S POLITICAL ECONOMY.  
— EXTRACT FROM FRANKLIN'S WORKS.

---

CAROLINE.

AT our last interview, Mrs. B., you were regretting that any restraint should be imposed on our trade with foreign countries; yet I cannot help thinking that every measure tending to discourage foreign commerce, and promote our own industry, would be extremely useful.

MRS. B.

You would find it difficult to accomplish both those objects; for in order to encourage our own industry we must facilitate the means of selling the

produce of our manufactures, and extend their market as much as possible. On the other hand, if we prohibit exportation, we limit the production of our manufactures to the supply which can be consumed at home. If the woollen manufacturers of Leeds, after having supplied the whole demand of England for broad cloths, have any capital left, they will use it in the preparation of woollen goods for exportation.

CAROLINE.

Why not rather employ it in the fabrication of other commodities which may be consumed at home?

MRS. B.

If there were a deficiency of capital in any other branch of industry at home, the redundancy would naturally be drawn to that branch; but if all the trade, that is, all the exchanges that could be made at home, have been made, we send the residue of our commodities to foreign markets for sale.

CAROLINE.

Yet it appears a great hardship on the poor to send goods abroad, which so many of them are in want of at home.

MRS. B.

The poor are first supplied with whatever they can afford to purchase: and without the means of

purchase you must recollect that there can be no effectual demand. It is not to be expected that farmers and manufacturers should labour for them merely from charitable motives, and were they so disposed, they would not long possess the means of continuing their benevolence. It would be very wrong, therefore, to consider this surplus produce as taken from the poor; for it would not have been produced had there been no demand for it in foreign countries.

CAROLINE.

That is very true. In all employment of capital men labour with a view to profit; they work, therefore, only for those who will pay them the value of their produce. And it is easy to conceive that those who have no further want of English commodities may yet wish to procure foreign goods. The English merchant will therefore say, "Since there is no more demand for the goods I deal in, I will export the remainder, which will be purchased abroad, and I shall get foreign commodities in exchange;—though my countrymen do not require any more cotton goods, I know that they will purchase wines, coffee, sugar, &c."

MRS. B.

Very well. Let us examine now what would be the effect of confining the employment of

commercial capital to the home trade. If the inhabitants of the West-Indian islands, Jamaica, for instance, were to prohibit the exportation of coffee and sugar, and the planters were obliged to trade only within the island, the consequence would be, that the demand for coffee and sugar would be very insignificant, and that an inconsiderable part only of the capital of the colony would find employment. The same effect would take place in Russia, if foreign merchants were not allowed to purchase the hemp and flax so abundantly produced in that country. If in Peru and Chili the exportation of indigo, bark, and other drugs was prohibited, the Europeans, who purchase them, would not be the only sufferers; the Americans would be impoverished for want of employment for their capital.

CAROLINE.

All this is very clear, I admit. But what security have we that merchants will not employ their capital in foreign commerce, before the demand for it in the home trade is fully supplied?

MRS. B.

That security is derived from the natural distribution of capital according to the rate of profit. If foreign commerce employed more capital than the country could spare, the demand for it at home



would raise the profits of the home trade, and the temptation of these increased profits would soon restore that portion of capital which had been unnecessarily withdrawn from it.

CAROLINE.

The rate of profit, then, affords an excellent criterion of the employment of capital most advantageous to the community. When foreign commerce offers greater profits than the home trade, it proves that there is a greater demand for capital in that branch of industry?

MRS. B.

Yes ; it proves that the country possesses a surplus quantity of produce either agricultural or manufactured, which cannot be disposed of in the home market ; and if the owners of this surplus were prevented from exchanging it for foreign commodities, it would not in future be produced, and those who produced it would be thrown out of employment.

The first commodities a country usually exports is agricultural produce, which she exchanges for manufactured goods ; this is still the case with America, on account of it being a newly-settled nation ; it is also the case with Poland and Russia, those countries having made slower progress in wealth and population than the other communities

of Europe. When nations are considerably advanced in wealth and population, all the food they raise is required at home, and manufactures are established in order to employ the increased numbers of people; in the course of time they find that they require more food than is produced at home, it then becomes expedient to export manufactured goods in exchange for corn, which they can obtain cheaper by importation than by raising it on inferior soils at home. And it is at this point that England is now arrived.

CAROLINE.

I am surprised that foreign commerce with distant countries should ever offer sufficient profits to afford a compensation to the merchant for the disadvantages arising from the slow return of capital.

MRS. B.

If it did not, no merchant would engage in it. The greater the distance of the market to which he sends his goods, the greater must be the profits on their sale, to make up not only for the tardy return of his capital, but also for the charges of conveyance of the goods. Freight and insurance from sea risks are both to be deducted from the profits of the merchant in foreign trade.

CAROLINE.

Then since we are obliged to sell our goods at such high prices in distant markets, I wonder that

we should find purchasers for them : would it not answer better for those countries to produce them at home ?

MRS. B.

You may be assured that no nation will purchase from abroad what may be procured of the same quality and for less expense at home. But all countries are not equally capable of producing the same kind of commodities, either rude or manufactured. The gifts of nature are still more diversified in the different climates of the earth, than the habits and dispositions of men. It would be impossible for us at any expense to produce the wines of Portugal, on account of the coldness of our climate. We can procure them only by an exchange of commodities : the Portuguese take our broad cloth in return : this, it is true, they might manufacture at home ; but as our climate is peculiarly favourable to pasturage, and our workmen particularly skilful in manufactures, broad cloths could not be made in Portugal equally good at the same expense, including the charges of freight and insurance ; and whilst the Portuguese can purchase them of us for less than they can fabricate them at home, it is certainly their interest to procure them in exchange for commodities the culture or fabrication of which is more suited to the nature of their climate and the habits of the people.

But the difference of price of our manufactured

goods at home or abroad is not so great as you would imagine; in articles of small bulk it is very trifling. I recollect some years since purchasing an English pocket-book at Turin for nearly the same price that it would have cost in London.

CAROLINE.

How, then, was the expense of conveyance defrayed; and what compensation was there for the slow return of capital?

MRS. B.

These expenses probably did not more than counterbalance the high rent and taxes paid by London shopkeepers, which I believe are comparatively insignificant at Turin. There might, perhaps, also be some bounty on the exportation of such goods, which would enable the merchant to sell them at a lower price.

CAROLINE.

Pray what is a bounty on goods?

MRS. B.

It is a pecuniary reward given by government for the exportation of certain goods. Governments, so far from partaking of your prejudices against foreign trade, often think it right to encourage the exportation of their manufactures by such artificial measures.

the course of the year, to purchase 12,000*l.* worth of goods; whilst, if he sent his merchandise to India, two years would probably elapse before he got his capital returned. In the first case, therefore, the 1000*l.* capital would afford twenty-four times more encouragement to industry than it would in the latter.

CAROLINE.

You do not thence mean to infer, that in the first case the profits would be twenty-four times greater?

MRS. B.

Certainly not. Competition is, you know, perpetually tending to equalise the profits of capital, in whatever way it is employed. Profits will consequently be proportioned to the slow return of capital; and must, therefore, be reckoned annually, and not calculated upon every time the capital is returned.

CAROLINE.

The period of the return of capital applies, then, not so much to the home or foreign trade, as to the distance of the market; for capital might be returned quicker in trading with Calais or Dunkirk than with Edinburgh and Cork?

MRS. B.

It is very true; and how much is it to be regretted that jealousies and dissensions should so

frequently impede and restrict the trade between neighbouring nations, which would otherwise be carried on with such great and reciprocal advantage ! But we shall reserve till our next interview the observations we have to make on foreign trade.

## CONVERSATION XIX.

---

### ON FOREIGN TRADE.

ADVANTAGES OF FOREIGN TRADE. — IT EMPLOYS  
THE SURPLUS OF CAPITAL, AND DISPOSES OF A  
SURPLUS OF COMMODITIES. — OF BOUNTIES. —  
EFFECTS OF RESTRICTIONS ON FOREIGN TRADE.  
— EXTRACT FROM SAY'S POLITICAL ECONOMY.  
— EXTRACT FROM FRANKLIN'S WORKS.

---

CAROLINE.

AT our last interview, Mrs. B., you were regretting that any restraint should be imposed on our trade with foreign countries; yet I cannot help thinking that every measure tending to discourage foreign commerce, and promote our own industry, would be extremely useful.

MRS. B.

You would find it difficult to accomplish both those objects; for in order to encourage our own industry we must facilitate the means of selling the

produce of our manufactures, and extend their market as much as possible. On the other hand, if we prohibit exportation, we limit the production of our manufactures to the supply which can be consumed at home. If the woollen manufacturers of Leeds, after having supplied the whole demand of England for broad cloths, have any capital left, they will use it in the preparation of woollen goods for exportation.

CAROLINE.

Why not rather employ it in the fabrication of other commodities which may be consumed at home?

MRS. B.

If there were a deficiency of capital in any other branch of industry at home, the redundancy would naturally be drawn to that branch; but if all the trade, that is, all the exchanges that could be made at home, have been made, we send the residue of our commodities to foreign markets for sale.

CAROLINE.

Yet it appears a great hardship on the poor to send goods abroad, which so many of them are in want of at home.

MRS. B.

The poor are first supplied with whatever they can afford to purchase: and without the means of



purchase you must recollect that there can be no effectual demand. It is not to be expected that farmers and manufacturers should labour for them merely from charitable motives, and were they so disposed, they would not long possess the means of continuing their benevolence. It would be very wrong, therefore, to consider this surplus produce as taken from the poor; for it would not have been produced had there been no demand for it in foreign countries.

CAROLINE.

That is very true. In all employment of capital men labour with a view to profit; they work, therefore, only for those who will pay them the value of their produce. And it is easy to conceive that those who have no further want of English commodities may yet wish to procure foreign goods. The English merchant will therefore say, "Since there is no more demand for the goods I deal in, I will export the remainder, which will be purchased abroad, and I shall get foreign commodities in exchange;—though my countrymen do not require any more cotton goods, I know that they will purchase wines, coffee, sugar, &c."

MRS. B.

Very well. Let us examine now what would be the effect of confining the employment of

commercial capital to the home trade. If the inhabitants of the West-Indian islands, Jamaica, for instance, were to prohibit the exportation of coffee and sugar, and the planters were obliged to trade only within the island, the consequence would be, that the demand for coffee and sugar would be very insignificant, and that an inconsiderable part only of the capital of the colony would find employment. The same effect would take place in Russia, if foreign merchants were not allowed to purchase the hemp and flax so abundantly produced in that country. If in Peru and Chili the exportation of indigo, bark, and other drugs was prohibited, the Europeans, who purchase them, would not be the only sufferers; the Americans would be impoverished for want of employment for their capital.

CAROLINE.

All this is very clear, I admit. But what security have we that merchants will not employ their capital in foreign commerce, before the demand for it in the home trade is fully supplied?

MRS. B.

That security is derived from the natural distribution of capital according to the rate of profit. If foreign commerce employed more capital than the country could spare, the demand for it at home

would raise the profits of the home trade, and the temptation of these increased profits would soon restore that portion of capital which had been unnecessarily withdrawn from it.

CAROLINE.

The rate of profit, then, affords an excellent criterion of the employment of capital most advantageous to the community. When foreign commerce offers greater profits than the home trade, it proves that there is a greater demand for capital in that branch of industry?

MRS. B.

Yes ; it proves that the country possesses a surplus quantity of produce either agricultural or manufactured, which cannot be disposed of in the home market ; and if the owners of this surplus were prevented from exchanging it for foreign commodities, it would not in future be produced, and those who produced it would be thrown out of employment.

The first commodities a country usually exports is agricultural produce, which she exchanges for manufactured goods ; this is still the case with America, on account of it being a newly-settled nation ; it is also the case with Poland and Russia, those countries having made slower progress in wealth and population than the other communities

of Europe. When nations are considerably advanced in wealth and population, all the food they raise is required at home, and manufactures are established in order to employ the increased numbers of people; in the course of time they find that they require more food than is produced at home, it then becomes expedient to export manufactured goods in exchange for corn, which they can obtain cheaper by importation than by raising it on inferior soils at home. And it is at this point that England is now arrived.

CAROLINE.

I am surprised that foreign commerce with distant countries should ever offer sufficient profits to afford a compensation to the merchant for the disadvantages arising from the slow return of capital.

MRS. B.

If it did not, no merchant would engage in it. The greater the distance of the market to which he sends his goods, the greater must be the profits on their sale, to make up not only for the tardy return of his capital, but also for the charges of conveyance of the goods. Freight and insurance from sea risks are both to be deducted from the profits of the merchant in foreign trade.

CAROLINE.

Then since we are obliged to sell our goods at such high prices in distant markets, I wonder that

we should find purchasers for them : would it not answer better for those countries to produce them at home ?

MRS. B.

You may be assured that no nation will purchase from abroad what may be procured of the same quality and for less expense at home. But all countries are not equally capable of producing the same kind of commodities, either rude or manufactured. The gifts of nature are still more diversified in the different climates of the earth, than the habits and dispositions of men. It would be impossible for us at any expense to produce the wines of Portugal, on account of the coldness of our climate. We can procure them only by an exchange of commodities : the Portuguese take our broad cloth in return : this, it is true, they might manufacture at home ; but as our climate is peculiarly favourable to pasturage, and our workmen particularly skilful in manufactures, broad cloths could not be made in Portugal equally good at the same expense, including the charges of freight and insurance ; and whilst the Portuguese can purchase them of us for less than they can fabricate them at home, it is certainly their interest to procure them in exchange for commodities the culture or fabrication of which is more suited to the nature of their climate and the habits of the people.

But the difference of price of our manufactured

goods at home or abroad is not so great as you would imagine; in articles of small bulk it is very trifling. I recollect some years since purchasing an English pocket-book at Turin for nearly the same price that it would have cost in London.

CAROLINE.

How, then, was the expense of conveyance defrayed; and what compensation was there for the slow return of capital?

MRS. B.

These expenses probably did not more than counterbalance the high rent and taxes paid by London shopkeepers, which I believe are comparatively insignificant at Turin. There might, perhaps, also be some bounty on the exportation of such goods, which would enable the merchant to sell them at a lower price.

CAROLINE.

Pray what is a bounty on goods?

MRS. B.

It is a pecuniary reward given by government for the exportation of certain goods. Governments, so far from partaking of your prejudices against foreign trade, often think it right to encourage the exportation of their manufactures by such artificial measures.

## CONVERSATION XIX.

---

### ON FOREIGN TRADE.

ADVANTAGES OF FOREIGN TRADE. — IT EMPLOYS  
THE SURPLUS OF CAPITAL, AND DISPOSES OF A  
SURPLUS OF COMMODITIES. — OF BOUNTIES. —  
EFFECTS OF RESTRICTIONS ON FOREIGN TRADE.  
— EXTRACT FROM SAY'S POLITICAL ECONOMY.  
— EXTRACT FROM FRANKLIN'S WORKS.

---

CAROLINE.

AT our last interview, Mrs. B., you were regretting that any restraint should be imposed on our trade with foreign countries; yet I cannot help thinking that every measure tending to discourage foreign commerce, and promote our own industry, would be extremely useful.

MRS. B.

You would find it difficult to accomplish both those objects; for in order to encourage our own industry we must facilitate the means of selling the

produce of our manufactures, and extend their market as much as possible. On the other hand, if we prohibit exportation, we limit the production of our manufactures to the supply which can be consumed at home. If the woollen manufacturers of Leeds, after having supplied the whole demand of England for broad cloths, have any capital left, they will use it in the preparation of woollen goods for exportation.

CAROLINE.

Why not rather employ it in the fabrication of other commodities which may be consumed at home?

MRS. B.

If there were a deficiency of capital in any other branch of industry at home, the redundancy would naturally be drawn to that branch; but if all the trade, that is, all the exchanges that could be made at home, have been made, we send the residue of our commodities to foreign markets for sale.

CAROLINE.

Yet it appears a great hardship on the poor to send goods abroad, which so many of them are in want of at home.

MRS. B.

The poor are first supplied with whatever they can afford to purchase: and without the means of



purchase you must recollect that there can be no effectual demand. It is not to be expected that farmers and manufacturers should labour for them merely from charitable motives, and were they so disposed, they would not long possess the means of continuing their benevolence. It would be very wrong, therefore, to consider this surplus produce as taken from the poor; for it would not have been produced had there been no demand for it in foreign countries.

CAROLINE.

That is very true. In all employment of capital men labour with a view to profit; they work, therefore, only for those who will pay them the value of their produce. And it is easy to conceive that those who have no further want of English commodities may yet wish to procure foreign goods. The English merchant will therefore say, "Since there is no more demand for the goods I deal in, I will export the remainder, which will be purchased abroad, and I shall get foreign commodities in exchange;—though my countrymen do not require any more cotton goods, I know that they will purchase wines, coffee, sugar, &c."

MRS. B.

Very well. Let us examine now what would be the effect of confining the employment of

commercial capital to the home trade. If the inhabitants of the West-Indian islands, Jamaica, for instance, were to prohibit the exportation of coffee and sugar, and the planters were obliged to trade only within the island, the consequence would be, that the demand for coffee and sugar would be very insignificant, and that an inconsiderable part only of the capital of the colony would find employment. The same effect would take place in Russia, if foreign merchants were not allowed to purchase the hemp and flax so abundantly produced in that country. If in Peru and Chili the exportation of indigo, bark, and other drugs was prohibited, the Europeans, who purchase them, would not be the only sufferers; the Americans would be impoverished for want of employment for their capital.

CAROLINE.

All this is very clear, I admit. But what security have we that merchants will not employ their capital in foreign commerce, before the demand for it in the home trade is fully supplied?

MRS. B.

That security is derived from the natural distribution of capital according to the rate of profit. If foreign commerce employed more capital than the country could spare, the demand for it at home

CAROLINE.

Yes; for were we at war with those countries which usually furnished us with corn, they would withhold the supply. Or, should they experience a dearth, they would no longer have it in their power to send us corn.

MRS. B.

We occasionally import corn from different parts of America, from the shores of the Baltic, and those of the Mediterranean seas. Now it is very improbable either that we should be in a state of warfare with those various countries at the same period of time, or that they should all be afflicted with a dearth of produce in the same season. There is much greater chance of a scarcity prevailing in any single country than in every part of the world at once. Indeed, facts have fully demonstrated, that when the weather is unfavourable to the crops of one country, it is almost invariably found to be favourable to those of another. I believe no single instance can be produced of a simultaneous failure of the crops throughout the whole commercial world. In the year 1800, when England suffered so much distress from the deficiency of the harvest, the crops were very abundant in Spain. While the harvest of 1803, which was extremely plentiful in this country, was so deficient in Spain as to produce a famine. Now it is evident,

that had a free corn trade existed between these countries, the distresses of both would have been alleviated.

CAROLINE.

Under such circumstances it would certainly be right to import corn; I object only to doing so habitually, and not depending in ordinary times, on the produce of our own country.

MRS. B.

If we apply to corn countries only in seasons of distress we shall find it very difficult to obtain relief. Those countries raise corn expressly for the nations which they usually supply with that article; but they will have but little to spare for a new customer, who, from a dearth at home, is compelled to seek for food abroad; and we could obtain it only by out-bidding other competitors. The supply, therefore, would be both scanty, and at a price which the lower ranks of people could ill afford to pay; so that there would be great distress, if not danger of a famine.

CAROLINE.

To prevent such a calamity we have only to raise so large a quantity of corn at home as will afford a plentiful supply in years of average produce; then in seasons of abundance we have the resource of exportation, and in bad seasons we might still have a sufficiency.

MRS. B.

It is impossible to raise at all times a sufficiency, without having often a superfluity. This is particularly the case with corn, as it is the most variable of almost all kinds of agricultural produce. If, therefore, we wish to raise such a quantity as will always secure us against want, we must in common seasons have some to spare, and in abundant years a great superfluity.

Now the more corn-land we cultivate, the higher will the price of corn be in average seasons. You start, Caroline; but paradoxical as this may appear, if you reflect upon the causes which occasion the regular high price of corn, independently of the variations of supply and demand, you will understand it.

The more corn is grown in a country, the greater will be the quantity of inferior land brought into cultivation, in order to produce it; and the price of corn, you know, must pay the cost of its production on the worst soil on which it is raised\*, otherwise it would cease to be produced. If, therefore, in order to insure a home supply, we force an ungrateful soil, at a great expense of capital, to yield a scanty crop, we raise the price of all the corn of the country to that standard, and we thus enable the landed proprietors to increase their rents.

\* See Conversation on Rent.

CAROLINE.

That is very true; and then by enhancing the price of the first necessities of life we must raise the rate of wages, in order to enable the labouring classes to live.

MRS. B.

Nor is this all; when the home supply proves superabundant, what is to become of it? The unnatural high price at which it usually sells in our market, owing to the forced encouragement given to agriculture, renders it unsaleable in foreign markets until the price is fallen so low as to be ruinous to farmers.

CAROLINE.

I cannot easily bring myself to look upon a superfluity of the necessities of life as a calamity;—if it is injurious to the farmer, what an advantage it is to the lower classes of people!

MRS. B.

The advantage is of a very temporary nature. The farmer who cultivates poor land in hopes of a remunerating price, must be ruined if he continues to cultivate at the low price occasioned by superfluity: he will therefore throw up the inferior lands, and the consequence will be that less corn will be produced in succeeding years than is requisite for

the supply ; and the superfluity will be succeeded by dearth or famine. Thus the price of corn will be continually fluctuating between the low price of a glutted market and the high price of scarcity.

A redundance of the necessaries of life is in some respects attended with more pernicious consequences than the excess of any other species of commodity. If the market were overstocked with tea and coffee, those articles would fall in price, and would not only be more freely consumed by the people accustomed to enjoy them, but the reduction of price would bring them within reach of a lower and more extensive class of people. Now this cannot happen with bread, because it is already the daily and most common food of the lowest ranks of society, and though in seasons of great plenty they may consume somewhat more than usual, the difference will not be very considerable; they will rather avail themselves of the cheapness of bread to devote a larger share of their wages to other gratifications; they will eat more meat, drink more spirits, or wear better clothes. Great part of the superabundance of corn will therefore remain in the granary of the farmer, instead of supplying him with the means of carrying on the cultivation of his land; the labourers who raised that corn will probably be driven to the parish for want of work, and the consequences which will ensue to the community who would have been fed by the fruits of their industry, may be easy to conceive.

CAROLINE.

But do you then regard a low price of corn, under all circumstances, as an evil?

MRS. B.

On the contrary, I consider it in general as highly advantageous when it results from low cost of production; it is attended with injurious consequences only when it will not remunerate the farmer. But when corn can be raised at a small expense, it can afford to be sold at a low price. It is this which renders it desirable to bring only good land under tillage, and not to force poor soils to yield scanty and expensive crops.

Countries that have plenty of good land and but little capital find no branch of industry so advantageous as the productions of agriculture; and the exportation of corn, we have observed, is their first attempt at foreign commerce. Thus America, being a newly settled country, and as yet but thinly inhabited, has great choice of fine soils, and can raise corn at a very small expense of production; accordingly we find that she not only feeds her own population, but regularly exports corn.

Poland and Prussia are still agricultural countries, exporting corn; but old established countries in general, such as England, which are far advanced in arts and manufactures, and have raised a population too great to be maintained by the produce of her



good soils, will find it answer better to import some portion of the corn they consume, and to convert their inferior lands into pasture. This would not only lower the price of bread, but also that of meat, milk, butter, and cheese, the supply of which would be increased by the conversion of corn land into pasture. When the home crops proved abundant, they would import less; when scanty, they would import more. Thus without difficulty they would proportion the supply to the demand, and keep both bread and wages steadily at moderate prices.

CAROLINE.

But with the additional expenses of freight and insurance, can we import corn from America cheaper than we can produce it at home?

MRS. B.

In ordinary seasons we certainly can; but not at the present price of corn.

CAROLINE.

And do you suppose that the present low price of corn, and the distressed state of agriculture, are owing to our producing too much corn at home?

MRS. B.

I have no doubt but that it is one of the causes, but it is connected with many others, which render the question so complicated and intricate that we

must leave it to wiser heads than our own to unravel it.

The system of growing a home supply of corn, in countries where great capital affords the means of maintaining a very large population, is attended not only with the disadvantage of keeping the price of corn high in average seasons, but likewise occasions greater fluctuations of price in times of dearth or abundance, than if those casualties were diminished by a free corn-trade with other countries. It would perhaps be difficult to say whether we have suffered most from a high or a low price of corn, within these last twenty years; but we have acquired sufficient experience of the evils arising from both these extremes to think, that the wisest course we could pursue, would be to adopt such measures as would prevent great fluctuations of price.

Nothing is more injurious to the interests of the labouring classes than great and sudden fluctuations in the price of bread: they are either distressed by unexpected poverty, or intoxicated by sudden prosperity; but if that prosperity is the effect but of one fruitful season, it gives rise to expenses they are unable to maintain. It is but a gleam of sunshine on a wintry day, and the buds it untimely develops are nipped by the succeeding frost.

CAROLINE.

Well, Mrs. B., I see that you will not allow of

any exception in favour of the corn-trade, and that I must consent to admit of the propriety of leaving all trade whatever perfectly free and open.

MRS. B.

That is certainly the wisest way. Instead of struggling against the dictates of reason and nature, and madly attempting to produce every thing at home, countries should study to direct their labours to those departments of industry for which their situation and circumstances are best adapted.

CAROLINE.

Yet you must allow me to observe, that there are numerous instances of our having established flourishing manufactures of goods which we formerly procured entirely from foreign commerce: such, for instance, as china-ware, muslins, damask linen, and a variety of others. Now does not this imply that we may sometimes direct our labour to a new branch of industry with greater advantage than by importing the goods from foreign countries?

MRS. B.

It certainly does; and it shews also, that as soon as we are able to cultivate or fabricate the commodities we have been accustomed to procure from foreign parts as cheap as we can import them, we never fail to do so. But the period for the intro-

duction of any new branch of industry should be left to the experience and discretion of the individuals concerned in it, and not attempted to be regulated or enforced by government. James I. attempted to compel his subjects to dye their woollen cloths in this country, instead of sending them to the Netherlands, as had been the usual practice; but the English-dyed woollen cloths proved both of worse quality and dearer than those of the Netherlands, and James was obliged to abandon his plan. Had the sovereign not interfered, dyers would have established themselves in this country as soon as the people had acquired sufficient skill to undertake the business; but the discouragement produced by an unsuccessful attempt probably retarded the natural period of adopting it.

If it were possible for a country both to cultivate and manufacture all kinds of produce with as little labour as it costs to purchase them from other countries, there would be no occasion for foreign commerce: but the remarkable manner in which Providence has varied the productions of nature in different climates, appears to indicate a design to promote an intercourse between nations, even to the most distant regions of the earth; an intercourse which would ever prove a source of reciprocal benefit and happiness, were it not often perverted by the bad passions and blind policy of man.

CAROLINE.

And independently of the diversity of soils, climates, and natural productions, I do not suppose that it would be possible for any single country to succeed in all branches of industry, any more than for a single individual to acquire any considerable skill in a great variety of pursuits?

MRS. B.

Certainly not. The same kind of division of labour which exists among the individuals of a community, is also in some degree observable among different countries; and when particular branches of industry are not formed by local circumstances, it will generally be found the best policy to endeavour to excel a neighbouring nation in those manufactures in which we are nearly on a par, rather than to attempt competition in those in which by long habit and skill they have acquired a decided superiority. Thus will the common stock of productions be most improved, and all countries most benefited. Nothing can be more illiberal and short-sighted than a jealousy of the progress of neighbouring countries, either in agriculture or manufactures. Their demand for our commodities, so far from diminishing, will always be found to increase with the means of purchasing them. It is the idleness and poverty, not the wealth and in-

dustry of neighbouring nations, that should excite alarm.

CAROLINE.

A tradesman would consider it more for his interest to set up his shop in the neighbourhood of opulent customers than of poor people who could not afford to purchase his goods; and why should not countries consider trade in the same point of view.

MRS. B.

Mirabeau, in his "*Monarchie Prussienne*," has carried this principle so far, that it has made him doubt whether the trade of France was injured by the revocation of the edict of Nantz, which drove so many skilful manufacturers and artificers out of the country.

" Il est en général un principe sûr en commerce:  
" plus vos acheteurs seront riches, plus vous leur  
" vendrez ; ainsi les causes qui enrichissent un peu-  
" ple augmentent toujours l'industrie de ceux qui  
" ont des affaires à négocier avec lui. Sans doute  
" c'est une démence frénétique de chasser 200,000  
" individus de son pays pour enrichir celui des  
" autres ; mais la nature qui veut conserver son  
" ouvrage ne cesse de réparer, par des compensa-  
" tions insensibles, les erreurs des hommes ; et les  
" fautes les plus désastreuses ne sont pas sans  
" remèdes. La grande vérité que nous offre cet  
" exemple mémorable, c'est qu'il est insensé de

“ détruire l’industrie et le commerce de ses voisins,  
“ puisqu’on anéantit en même tems chez soi-même  
“ ces trésors. Si de tels efforts pouvoient jamais  
“ produire leur effet, ils dépeupleroient le monde,  
“ et rendroient très-infortunée la nation qui auroit  
“ eu le malheur d’engloutir toute l’industrie, tout  
“ le commerce du globe, et de vendre toujours  
“ sans jamais acheter. Heureusement la Provi-  
“ dence a tellement disposé les choses que les délires  
“ des souverains ne sauroient arrêter entièrement  
“ ses vues de bonheur notre espèce.”

CAROLINE.

The more I learn upon this subject, the more I feel convinced that the interest of nations, as well as those of individuals, so far from being opposed to each other, are in the most perfect unison.

MRS. B.

Liberal and enlarged views will always lead to similar conclusions, and teach us to cherish sentiments of universal benevolence towards each other; hence the superiority of science over mere practical knowledge.

## CONVERSATION XXI.

---

*Subject of* FOREIGN TRADE *continued.*

OF BILLS OF EXCHANGE. — OF THE BALANCE OF TRADE. — CAUSE OF THE *REAL* VARIATION OF THE EXCHANGE. — DISPROPORTION OF EXPORTS AND IMPORTS. — CAUSE OF THE *NOMINAL* VARIATION OF THE EXCHANGE. — DEPRECIATION OF THE VALUE OF THE CURRENCY OF THE COUNTRY.

---

MRS. B.

I HOPE that you are now quite satisfied of the advantages which result from foreign commerce?

CAROLINE.

Perfectly so ; but there is one thing which perplexes me. In a general point of view I conceive that trade consists in an exchange of commodities ; but I do not understand how this exchange takes place between merchants. The wine-merchant, for instance, who imports wine from Portugal, does



not export goods in return for it ; his trade is confined to the article of wine ?

MRS. B.

There are many general merchants who both export and import various articles of trade. Thus the Spanish merchant, the Turkey merchant, and the West-Indian merchant, import all the different commodities which we receive from those countries, and generally export English goods in return. It is, however, the countries, rather than the individuals, who *exchange* their respective productions ; for both the goods exported and imported are in all cases bought and sold, and never actually exchanged.

CAROLINE.

But since the merchants of the respective countries do not literally exchange their goods, they must each of them send a sum of money in payment ; and these sums of money will be nearly equivalent. If the London merchant has 1000*l.* to pay for wines at Lisbon, the Lisbon merchant will have nearly the same sum to pay for broad cloth in London. It is to be regretted, therefore, that the goods should not be actually exchanged, or that some mode should not be devised of reciprocally transferring the debts, in order to avoid so much useless expense and trouble.

MRS. B.

Such a mode has been devised, and these purchases and sales are usually made without the intervention of money, by means of written orders called *bills of exchange*.

CAROLINE.

Is not then a bill of exchange a species of paper-money like a bank-note?

MRS. B.

Not exactly; instead of being a promissory note, it is an order addressed to the person abroad to whom the merchant sends his goods, directing him to pay the amount of the bill, at a certain date, to some third person mentioned in the bill. Thus when a woollen merchant sends broad cloths to Portugal, he draws such a bill on the merchant to whom he consigns them; but instead of sending it with the goods to Portugal, he disposes of it in London; that is to say, he enquires whether any person wants such a bill for the purpose of discharging a debt in Portugal. He accordingly applies to some wine-merchant who owes a sum of money to a mercantile house at Lisbon for wines imported from that country, and who finds it convenient to avail himself of this mode of payment, in order to avoid the expense of sending money to Portugal. He therefore gives the woollen-merchant

the value of his bill, and having his own name or that of his correspondent in Portugal inserted in the bill as the third person to whom the amount of the bill is to be paid, transmits it to his correspondent in Portugal, who receives the money from the person on whom it is drawn.

CAROLINE.

The same bill then is the means of paying for both commodities, the broad cloth and the wine; and it supersedes the necessity of transmitting two sums of money for that purpose. A bill of exchange is a most convenient and economical contrivance, and I feel very much inclined to avail myself of it. A friend of mine at York owes me a sum of money for purchases I have made for her in London; and my sister Emily is indebted about the same sum to a glover at York. I might, therefore, draw a bill of exchange on my friend, which Emily would buy of me, and forward it to the glover at York for the purpose of discharging her debt for the gloves; and he would receive the money from my friend on whom it was drawn. It is, if I understand you right, by such transfers of debts that commodities are really exchanged between merchants?

MRS. B.

I am glad to see that you understand the use of

a bill of exchange so well. It will therefore be evident to you that if, when two countries are trading together, the value of the goods exported and imported be equal, the amount of the bills of exchange in payment of those goods will be so likewise; and the debts will be mutually settled without the necessity of transmitting money.

CAROLINE.

That is quite clear: but it must, I suppose, frequently happen that the value of the goods exported and imported is not equal, and in that case the bills of exchange will not settle the whole of the respective debts, and some balance or sum of money will remain due from one country to the other.

MRS. B.

This is called the balance of trade. In order to explain to you in what manner such a debt is settled, let us take, for example, our trade with Russia: — if, in trading with that country, our exports and imports are exactly equal in value, the exchange between Russia and England is said to be at par, or equal.

But if the value of our imports should have exceeded our exports, so that, for instance, we should have received more hemp and tallow *from*, than we have sent broad-cloths and hardware *to* Russia, there will be a greater amount of bills

drawn by Russian merchants on England, than by English merchants on Russia. After their reciprocal debts are settled, therefore, as far as the bills will enable them to do so, there will remain a surplus of Russian bills drawn on England, which will require to be paid in money.

CAROLINE.

Then some of our merchants will be under the necessity of sending money to Russia in payment of their debts.

MRS. B.

This every merchant endeavours to avoid, on account of the heavy expenses of freight and insurance of the money; as soon, therefore, as there appears to be a scarcity of English bills on Russia, every English merchant who is indebted to that country is eager to procure them. The competition of merchants for these bills raises their price, for they find it answer to give something more than the amount of the bill rather than send gold to Russia to pay for their hemp and tallow. The sum thus given for a bill above its amount is called a *premium*, and our exchange with Russia is, in this case, said to be *unfavourable*, or *below par*.

CAROLINE.

That is to say, that a man who owes a sum of

money to Russia, must give something more than the amount of the debt in order to pay it?

MRS. B.

Yes; and the amount of the premium given, depends, of course, on the degree of scarcity of the bills.

CAROLINE.

And as the scarcity of the bills is owing to the value of our imports exceeding that of our exports, our exchange must be favourable or unfavourable with any country in proportion as the exports or imports prevail,

But our exchange with Russia, I suppose, can never fall below what it would cost to transport gold to Russia; for as it is optional with our merchants to pay either in bills or money, if the premium on the bill were greater than the expense of sending money, they would prefer the latter mode of payment.

MRS. B.

Undoubtedly; and as the expense of sending gold to different countries varies according to the distance, and to the facility or difficulty of our intercourse with them, a favourable or unfavourable exchange with those countries will vary accordingly,

CAROLINE.

But the premium given for bills of exchange,

after all, does not supersede the necessity of our paying the balance of debt in gold; it merely removes the difficulty from one individual to another: for those merchants who finally cannot obtain bills must transmit money in payment.

MRS. B.

I beg your pardon; an unfavourable exchange in a great measure corrects itself; but this, it is true, requires some explanation. There are merchants who make it their business to trade in bills of exchange; that is to say, to buy them where they are abundant and cheap, and sell them where they are scarce and dear. Thus bills of exchange become an article of commerce like cloth, or any other commodity. Therefore when English bills on Russia are scarce, those merchants buy up the bills drawn by other countries on Russia, and supply the English market with them.

CAROLINE.

But when English bills on Russia are scarce, there may perhaps be no surplus of bills on Russia in other countries to supply the English market.

MRS. B.

Generally speaking, when there is a deficiency of bills on Russia in one country, there will be a redundancy of them in some other; for though the

exportations and importations of Russia with any particular country may be unequal, her general exportations and importations will, upon the whole, nearly balance each other : because if there was a constant excess of importation, Russia would be drained of money to pay for it ; if, on the contrary, there was an excess of exportations, the money received in payment would accumulate, and depreciate the value of the currency of the country. The goods which Russia purchases, therefore, from foreign countries, must, upon the long run, be to the same amount as the goods which she sells in exchange for them ; so that if there is a balance of debt due *to* Russia from one country, there must be a balance of debt due *from* Russia to another country. The bills of exchange, therefore, drawn by Russia on foreign countries, and those drawn by foreign countries on Russia, will balance each other ; and it is the business of the dealers in bills to discover where there is a superfluity, and where a deficiency of these bills, with a view to buy them in the one place, and sell them in the other.

## CAROLINE.

If, then, the bill-merchants instead of supplying the English market with bills on Russia, bought up the surplus of Russian bills on England, it would equally answer the purpose of paying our debt to that country ?



MRS. B.

Exactly. In our trade with Italy, for instance, we import large quantities of silk, olive oil, and various other articles, and our exportations are manufactured goods only to a trifling amount. The exchange would, in this case, be so unfavourable as to reduce us to the necessity of exporting gold in payment for the excess of imports, did not the bill-merchants come to our assistance. This useful class of men buy up the surplus of Italian bills on England, and send them for sale to Germany, France, Spain, or wherever there is a deficiency of bills on Italy, and where they will consequently sell with profit.

CAROLINE.

Thus Germany, France, or Spain, discharge our debt to Italy?

MRS. B.

Yes; provided any of those countries are in our debt; otherwise, you know they would not purchase our bills of exchange.

CAROLINE.

One would imagine that these operations of the bill-merchants would invariably have the effect of counteracting the fluctuations of exchanges, and keep them constantly at par.

MRS. B.

If the business of the bill-merchant could be transacted with the same celerity and regularity as that of the bankers in London, who meet together every day, after the hours of business, to settle their respective accounts, it might influence the exchanges in the manner you suppose. But the speculations of the bill-merchant embrace so wide a sphere, and so many circumstances occur in the course of trade, or of political events, by which the exchanges are affected, that no individual prudence or foresight can prevent great fluctuations.

CAROLINE.

Are then merchants often reduced to the necessity of sending abroad money in payment of foreign goods?

MRS. B.

Scarcely ever, I believe, excepting where there is a greater demand for money than for goods; for independently of the operations of the bill-merchants, there is yet another means of preventing that expense. When the English merchants who export goods to Russia, find that the excess of imports over exports produces a scarcity of their bills on Russia, which enables them to sell them to the importing merchants at a premium, such an addition to their usual profits of trade induces them to increase their exportations, and has, in

fact, the effect of a bounty ; for they can now afford to export goods which, before, did not yield sufficient profits to enable them to do it. Whilst, on the contrary, our importing merchants of Russian commodities, who are obliged to purchase these bills at a premium, (which has the effect of a duty, since it is a clear deduction from their profits,) will confine their importations to such commodities only as will leave them their usual profits, after deducting the premium upon the bills with which they were to be paid.

CAROLINE.

The premiums, then, which our importing merchants lose, our exporting merchants gain. This must undoubtedly have a considerable effect in encouraging exportation, and restraining importation, and tend rapidly to restore the equality of the exchange.

MRS. B.

The evil, then, of an unfavourable exchange immediately gives rise to the remedy which corrects it, and actually tends to equalise the exports and imports. But in order to have completely that effect, it would be necessary that the country with whom the exchange is unfavourable should require as much of our productions as we do of theirs, which is not always the case. The unfavourable exchange, however, enables the exporting merchant to afford his goods abroad at a lower rate,

because a part of his profit is derived from the premium on the exchange, and thus more persons abroad being able to purchase at the reduced price, the market for the goods is enlarged, and a greater quantity consumed.

CAROLINE.

All these circumstances, then, together must nearly supersede the necessity of sending money to balance the account?

MRS. B.

Very nearly so, I believe, except with such countries as, having mines of their own, may be said to produce money. If Spain and Portugal were to retain all the gold and silver which they derive from their mines, it would fall so much in value in those countries, that no laws could prevent its conveyance to others where its value was greater. It would be the most profitable article a Spanish or Portuguese merchant could export in payment for the goods imported; and indeed we find that they supply Europe with gold and silver, in the same manner as we supply it with the produce of our West-Indian colonies, coffee and sugar. We have, in a former conversation, observed how the precious metals were diffused throughout all civilised nations, and the supply every where so proportioned to the demand, as to admit of no other variation of value

than the small difference arising from the expense of bringing them from the mines to the different countries where they are wanted.

CAROLINE.

But have I not heard of the exchange having been much below what it would cost to send money abroad ?

MRS. B.

That is true ; but I believe it is principally to be ascribed to another and a totally different cause, which nominally influences the exchanges to a very great extent. We formerly observed, that a depreciation of value of the currency of a country raises the price of commodities in that country. Whether the depreciation arises from an unnecessary increase of currency, from an adulteration of the coin, or from any other cause, it invariably produces this effect.

Let us suppose the currency of England to be depreciated 25 per cent.; that is to say, that a sum worth 100*l.* previous to the depreciation, is now really worth only 75*l.*, though it retains its nominal value of 100*l.* An English bill of exchange, which represents a certain portion of the currency, will partake of this depreciation, and will no longer be equal in value to a foreign bill of the same amount. It would require an English bill of 133*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* to exchange for a foreign one of 100*l.* ; therefore, if

before the depreciation the exchange were at par, this circumstance would make it immediately fall 25 per cent.

CAROLINE.

Would not the evil, then, be remedied by increasing the exports, and diminishing the imports, as when the unfavourable state of the exchange arises from the unequal balance of trade?

MRS. B.

Certainly not. For though it is true that in both cases the exporting merchant can sell his bills at a premium, yet when this premium arises from a depreciation of the currency, it cannot be considered as any gain to him, because it is exactly balanced by the advanced price of the goods he exports, which operates as a loss.

CAROLINE.

I think I understand it. The depreciation of currency which produces the premium on the bill of exchange produces also an increase in the price of the merchandise, and these effects, resulting from the same cause, must always correspond and be felt in the same proportion. Thus if a merchant exports cloth to Hamburgh which costs him 200l., whatever profits he might expect under the ordinary state of the currency must be diminished 25 per cent., in consequence of his giving 50l. more for

his cloth than he would otherwise have done. Yet as he will sell the bill of exchange which he draws on Hamburg for the payment of his cloth at a premium of 50%, his profits will remain precisely the same, upon the whole transaction, as if every thing had gone on in its regular way.

MRS. B.

You have explained it perfectly well. Remember therefore that when the exchange is unfavourable in consequence of the depreciation of the currency, it is only *nominally*, not really unfavourable; for it may take place when the exports and imports are perfectly equal. And recollect also that the difference the exchange produces in the sale or purchase of bills is neither a loss nor a gain to the parties, and that it has no effect either on exportation or importation.

CAROLINE.

But is it easy to distinguish between two causes which are so similar in their effects, and to ascertain at any time which of them it is that influences the exchange?

MRS. B.

Far from it: this has been a subject of much discussion, particularly during the late war. If it be true that the currency of the country has been increased beyond what was required, it must be

considered as depreciated, and as having nominally affected the exchange.

On the other hand, as the system of warfare engaged us in very great expense on the Continent, whilst it was remarkably unfavourable to our exportations, the balance of foreign debt was very much against us, and the expense of transmitting gold considerably increased; so far the exchange may be said to have been *really* unfavourable. It is probable that both these causes contributed to the very low rate of our exchange during the late war.

Notwithstanding all the investigation which these subjects have undergone, there still prevails, even amongst our legislators, the old popular error respecting the balance of trade. Even at this day we find persons congratulating the country, that the exports exceed the imports, and that in consequence a balance of money remains due to us, which is considered as so much gain to the country.

CAROLINE.

But do those who maintain such an opinion know, that this money would not be due to us, unless we had exported a surplus of merchandise to an equal amount?

MRS. B.

It is from that circumstance they conceive the advantage arises. They assert that since the poor



are maintained by labour, the more work we perform for other countries, and the more money we receive for our work, the richer we must be.

CAROLINE.

Not if we export the fruits of their labour and receive only gold in return: for the poor are maintained not by the act of labour, but by its produce; and if all that produce were exported, and nothing but gold received in exchange, we should be much in the situation of King Midas, who was starved because every thing he touched was converted into gold.

But do not the bill-merchants prevent this importation of gold, by transferring the bills of exchange from one country to another? for if our balance of trade is favourable with one country, it must be unfavourable with another.

MRS. B.

No doubt they do. If it were possible to have what is called a favourable balance of trade with every country, we should accumulate a quantity of the precious metals which would answer no other purpose than to depreciate our currency.

The most advantageous trade for both parties concerned is when the exports and imports are equal, so that the balance does not preponderate on either side; for it is as injurious to one country to part with money which is wanted at home for

purposes of currency, as it is to the other to receive it when it is not wanted.

When a country receives bullion, it should not be in payment of a balance of debt, but as a commodity for which there is a demand. This demand will always take place in thriving countries, not only because gold and silver bullion are wanted by jewellers and silversmiths for the purposes of luxury: but also because, as the saleable produce of the country increases, an additional quantity of currency is required for its circulation.

CAROLINE.

According to this theory of the balance of trade, it should always be against Spain and Portugal, and favourable to every other country; because it is through Spain and Portugal that all the treasures of the new world flow into Europe?

MRS. B.

True; but they are not sent immediately from those countries to the most distant parts of Europe, but are transferred through the intermediate countries. Thus France sends *Louis* to Geneva to pay for the watches she imports from that place; or to Italy, in payment of raw silks, olive oil, &c. So that the countries most distant from Spain and Portugal would consequently have what is absurdly called the balance of trade in their favour; whilst

the intermediate countries would have it favourable with those which were nearer Spain than themselves, and unfavourable with those which were more distant.

This, however, is a general principle, which, though true in theory, requires modification, if applied to practice. A great variety of circumstances occasion fluctuations in the regular distribution of the wealth of America. However extraordinary it may appear, it is not very long since we sent considerable quantities of specie to Spain and Portugal, to maintain our troops in those countries: so much does war reverse the natural order of things. Instead of exporting our manufactures to bring back gold, we were obliged to drain our circulation to send money in order to support our troops, whilst our manufacturers were either starving, or became members of that very army which caused their ruin.

CAROLINE.

But if Spain, from the abundance of her gold and silver, imports such large quantities of manufactured goods, is it not a check to her industry at home?

MRS. B.

It certainly is; though not so much as you would imagine, because she does not obtain the gold and silver of America free of cost; she obtains it partly

in the form of a tax imposed by the mother-country, or rent for the royal mines; and the rest by payment in produce or manufactured goods. But these goods are not necessarily manufactured in Spain or Portugal. A Spanish merchant having imported goods from England and sent them to America, receives back gold and silver in payment, which are transmitted to England, if wanted there. Spain and Portugal being the *entrepôt*, in consequence of the strict regulations by which the gold and silver are compelled to be brought to the mother-country.

The want of industry in Spain, though it proceeds in a great measure from the nature of its religion and government, is also in part attributable to the effect which the influx of the precious metals has produced.

In *Townsend's Travels in Spain*, which abound with philosophical observations, it is stated, “ that  
“ the gold and silver of America, instead of ani-  
“ mating the country and promoting industry,  
“ instead of giving life and vigour to the whole  
“ community, by the increase of arts, of manufac-  
“ tures, and of commerce, had an opposite effect,  
“ and produced in the event weakness, poverty,  
“ and depopulation. The wealth which proceeds  
“ from industry resembles the copious yet tranquil  
“ stream, which passes silent, and almost invisible,  
“ enriches the whole extent of country through

fact, the effect of a bounty ; for they can now afford to export goods which, before, did not yield sufficient profits to enable them to do it. Whilst, on the contrary, our importing merchants of Russian commodities, who are obliged to purchase these bills at a premium, (which has the effect of a duty, since it is a clear deduction from their profits,) will confine their importations to such commodities only as will leave them their usual profits, after deducting the premium upon the bills with which they were to be paid.

CAROLINE.

The premiums, then, which our importing merchants lose, our exporting merchants gain. This must undoubtedly have a considerable effect in encouraging exportation, and restraining importation, and tend rapidly to restore the equality of the exchange.

MRS. B.

The evil, then, of an unfavourable exchange immediately gives rise to the remedy which corrects it, and actually tends to equalise the exports and imports. But in order to have completely that effect, it would be necessary that the country with whom the exchange is unfavourable should require as much of our productions as we do of theirs, which is not always the case. The unfavourable exchange, however, enables the exporting merchant to afford his goods abroad at a lower rate,

because a part of his profit is derived from the premium on the exchange, and thus more persons abroad being able to purchase at the reduced price, the market for the goods is enlarged, and a greater quantity consumed.

CAROLINE.

All these circumstances, then, together must nearly supersede the necessity of sending money to balance the account?

MRS. B.

Very nearly so, I believe, except with such countries as, having mines of their own, may be said to produce money. If Spain and Portugal were to retain all the gold and silver which they derive from their mines, it would fall so much in value in those countries, that no laws could prevent its conveyance to others where its value was greater. It would be the most profitable article a Spanish or Portuguese merchant could export in payment for the goods imported; and indeed we find that they supply Europe with gold and silver, in the same manner as we supply it with the produce of our West-Indian colonies, coffee and sugar. We have, in a former conversation, observed how the precious metals were diffused throughout all civilised nations, and the supply every where so proportioned to the demand, as to admit of no other variation of value

remains for us to examine how this revenue may be disposed of.

CAROLINE.

I have already learnt that revenue may *either be spent, or accumulated and converted into capital*; and that the more a man economises for the latter purpose, the richer he becomes.

MRS. B.

This observation is equally applicable to the capital of a country, which may be augmented by industry and frugality, or diminished by prodigality.

CAROLINE.

The capital of a country, I think you said, consisted of the capital of its inhabitants taken collectively?

MRS. B.

It does; but you must be careful not to estimate the revenue of a country in the same manner, for it would lead to very erroneous calculations. Let us, for instance, suppose my income to be 10,000*l.* a-year, and that I pay 500*l.* a-year for the rent of my house—it is plain that this 500*l.* constitutes a portion of the income of my landlord; and since therefore the same property, by being transferred from one to another, may successively form the income of several individuals, the revenue of the country cannot be estimated by the aggregate income of the people.

CAROLINE.

And does not the same reasoning apply to the expenditure of a country; since the 500*l.* a-year which you spend in house-rent will be afterwards spent by your landlord in some other manner?

MRS. B.

True, because spending money is but exchanging one thing against another of equal value;—it is giving, for instance, one shilling in exchange for a loaf of bread, five guineas in exchange for a coat; instead of a shilling we are possessed of a loaf of bread; instead of five guineas, of a coat; we are therefore as rich before as after these purchases are made.

CAROLINE.

If so, how is it that we are impoverished by spending money?

MRS. B.

It is not by purchasing, but by consuming the things we have purchased, that we are impoverished. When we have eaten the bread and worn out the coat, we are the poorer by five guineas and a shilling than we were before.

A baker is not poorer for purchasing a hundred sacks of flour, nor a clothier for buying a hundred pieces of cloth, because they do not consume these commodities.



When a man purchases commodities with a view of re-selling them, he is a dealer in such commodities, and it is capital which he lays out. But when he purchases commodities for the purpose of using and consuming them, it is called expenditure. *Expenditure* therefore always implies consumption.

CAROLINE.

I understand the difference perfectly. *The one* lays out capital with the view of re-selling his goods with profit. The other spends money with the view of consuming the goods with loss;—that is to say, the loss of the value of the goods he consumes.

MRS. B.

Just so. Thus though the sum of money you spend will serve the purpose of transferring commodities successively from one person to another, yet the commodities themselves can be consumed but once.

Therefore the consumption of a country may, like its capital, be estimated by the aggregate consumption of its inhabitants; and the great question relative to the prosperity of the country, is, how far that consumption takes place productively, and how far unproductively.

CAROLINE.

That certainly is a very important point; for in

the former case it increases wealth, in the latter it destroys it.

Yet, Mrs. B., supposing a man were so prodigal as to spend not only the whole of his income, but even the capital itself, provided that it were spent in the maintenance of productive labourers, though it would ruin the individual, I do not conceive that it would injure the country; for whether a man lay out his capital in the maintenance of productive labourers with a view to profit, or whether he spend it in purchasing the fruits of their industry for the purpose of enjoyment, I can perceive no difference relative to the country; in both cases an equal number of people would be employed, and consequently an equal quantity of wealth produced. If his money went to the maintenance of unproductive labourers, and nothing substantial was had in exchange, that would alter the case; but if it is spent amongst tradesmen, who will furnish him with articles for his enjoyment, such as magnificent apparel, splendid equipages, sumptuous entertainments, he will then replace the capital that those tradesmen have been consuming, in order to produce these commodities, which capital will again be usefully employed in producing more.

MRS. B.

That is very true; and so far the prodigal has done no harm. In spending his capital amongst

are maintained by labour, the more work we perform for other countries, and the more money we receive for our work, the richer we must be.

CAROLINE.

Not if we export the fruits of their labour and receive only gold in return: for the poor are maintained not by the act of labour, but by its produce; and if all that produce were exported, and nothing but gold received in exchange, we should be much in the situation of King Midas, who was starved because every thing he touched was converted into gold.

But do not the bill-merchants prevent this importation of gold, by transferring the bills of exchange from one country to another? for if our balance of trade is favourable with one country, it must be unfavourable with another.

MRS. B.

No doubt they do. If it were possible to have what is called a favourable balance of trade with every country, we should accumulate a quantity of the precious metals which would answer no other purpose than to depreciate our currency.

The most advantageous trade for both parties concerned is when the exports and imports are equal, so that the balance does not preponderate on either side; for it is as injurious to one country to part with money which is wanted at home for

purposes of currency, as it is to the other to receive it when it is not wanted.

When a country receives bullion, it should not be in payment of a balance of debt, but as a commodity for which there is a demand. This demand will always take place in thriving countries, not only because gold and silver bullion are wanted by jewellers and silversmiths for the purposes of luxury: but also because, as the saleable produce of the country increases, an additional quantity of currency is required for its circulation.

CAROLINE.

According to this theory of the balance of trade, it should always be against Spain and Portugal, and favourable to every other country; because it is through Spain and Portugal that all the treasures of the new world flow into Europe?

MRS. B.

True; but they are not sent immediately from those countries to the most distant parts of Europe, but are transferred through the intermediate countries. Thus France sends *Louis* to Geneva to pay for the watches she imports from that place; or to Italy, in payment of raw silks, olive oil, &c. So that the countries most distant from Spain and Portugal would consequently have what is absurdly called the balance of trade in their favour; whilst

the intermediate countries would have it favourable with those which were nearer Spain than themselves, and unfavourable with those which were more distant.

This, however, is a general principle, *which*, though true in theory, requires modification, *if* applied to practice. A great variety of circumstances occasion fluctuations in the regular distribution of the wealth of America. However extraordinary it may appear, it is not very long since we sent considerable quantities of specie to Spain and Portugal, to maintain our troops in those countries: so much does war reverse the natural order of things. Instead of exporting our manufactures to bring back gold, we were obliged to drain our circulation to send money in order to support our troops, whilst our manufacturers were either starving, or became members of that very army which caused their ruin.

CAROLINE.

But if Spain, from the abundance of her gold and silver, imports such large quantities of manufactured goods, is it not a check to her industry at home?

MRS. B.

It certainly is; though not so much as you would imagine, because she does not obtain the gold and silver of America free of cost; she obtains it partly

in the form of a tax imposed by the mother-country, or rent for the royal mines; and the rest by payment in produce or manufactured goods. But these goods are not necessarily manufactured in Spain or Portugal. A Spanish merchant having imported goods from England and sent them to America, receives back gold and silver in payment, which are transmitted to England, if wanted there. Spain and Portugal being the *entrepôt*, in consequence of the strict regulations by which the gold and silver are compelled to be brought to the mother-country.

The want of industry in Spain, though it proceeds in a great measure from the nature of its religion and government, is also in part attributable to the effect which the influx of the precious metals has produced.

In *Townsend's Travels in Spain*, which abound with philosophical observations, it is stated, “ that  
“ the gold and silver of America, instead of ani-  
“ mating the country and promoting industry,  
“ instead of giving life and vigour to the whole  
“ community, by the increase of arts, of manufac-  
“ tures, and of commerce, had an opposite effect,  
“ and produced in the event weakness, poverty,  
“ and depopulation. The wealth which proceeds  
“ from industry resembles the copious yet tranquil  
“ stream, which passes silent, and almost invisible,  
“ enriches the whole extent of country through

But these wise dispensations are often in a great measure subverted by the folly and ignorance of man. An injudicious interference of government, for instance, may give peculiar advantages to the employment of capital in one particular branch of industry, to the prejudice of others, and thus destroy that natural and useful distribution of it, which is so essential to the prosperity of the community.

CAROLINE.

If ever the legislature could interfere with advantage, I should think it would be in some regulations respecting expenditure. I should be strongly tempted to restrain the use of luxuries, in order to induce the owners of capital to employ it in agriculture, and such homely manufactures as are suited to the consumption of the poor: such a measure could not fail to produce a more equal distribution of the comforts of life.

MRS. B.

Sumptuary laws have been instituted with that view in many countries. But after all we have said of the benefits resulting from the natural distribution of capital when unrestrained and uninfluenced by political regulations, I confess that I am surprised at your wishing to compel people to employ it in one way rather than in another.

CAROLINE.

But if that one way should prove the right way?

MRS. B.

Then capital will follow that direction by its natural impulse, without requiring any foreign aid. Be assured that the only right way is to leave the use of capital to the care of those to whom it belongs; they will be the most likely to discover in what line it can be employed to the greatest advantage.

CAROLINE.

Of their own advantage they are no doubt the best judges; but are you sure that they will be equally attentive to the advantage of the poor? Sumptuary laws appear to me to afford peculiar encouragement to the production of the necessities of life. But the principal use of sumptuary laws would be to repress the expenditure of revenue. And since it is so desirable that capital should not be dissipated, surely the same principles will apply to revenue; would it not be advantageous to save great part of that also, in order to convert it into capital?

MRS. B.

Capital, you know, has arisen solely from savings from revenue; but you are aware that there must be a limit to such savings.



CAROLINE.

Certainly there is a limit, because we could not live without consuming some part of it; but the less we consume, and the more we save, the better.

MRS. B.

That is pushing the principle too far : wealth is accumulated for the purpose of enjoyment ; and if by a liberal though prudent expenditure, social affections are cultivated, and the happiness of mankind promoted and extended, I see no reason why we should be debarred from indulging in some of the best feelings of our nature.

The two extremes of parsimony and prodigality are perhaps equally pernicious ; the one as destructive of the social and benevolent affections, the other as wasting the provision which nature *has* destined for the maintenance and employment of the poor.

But there is another point of view in which sumptuary laws have a dangerous tendency. By diminishing objects of desire you run some risk of giving a general check to industry.

Tell me why do the rich employ the poor?

CAROLINE.

In order to derive an income from the profits of their labour.

MRS. B.

And what use do the rich make of this income?

CAROLINE.

They either spend the whole, or they economise part in order to augment their capital.

MRS. B.

But why should they be desirous of increasing their capital.

CAROLINE.

There are so many reasons for wishing to be rich, that I scarcely know how to enumerate them. The pride of wealth is a motive with some men, the love of independence with others; the apprehension of future reverses incites a third to accumulate; the wish to increase his means of doing good stimulates the industry of another; the desire of providing for a family, and leaving them in affluence, is a powerful inducement with many; but the ambition of improving their situation in life, and of increasing their enjoyments by a more liberal expenditure, is, I think, the most general, and perhaps the strongest of all the motives for accumulating riches.

MRS. B.

If, then, laws be enacted which restrain a man

from spending any part of his income in luxuries, you take away one of his motives for wishing to augment his capital: and a growing capital is, you know, an increase of subsistence for the poor.

CAROLINE.

I would wish to prohibit only that excess of luxury which you have censured as pernicious.

MRS. B.

It is extremely difficult to draw the line between necessities and luxuries; these form a scale which comprehends all the various comforts and conveniences of life, the graduations of which are too numerous and too minute to be distinct. We have considered as necessities whatever the rate of wages of the lowest ranks of people have enabled them to command; they would consider as luxuries whatever they have not been accustomed to enjoy; though when they can afford it there is no excess. Excess, I conceive, depends not so much on the quantity or nature of the luxury, as upon its relative proportion to the means of the individual. A daily meal of meat is an excess of luxury to the family of a common labourer, because they are not used to it, and their wages will not enable them to command it; whilst a table abounding with expensive delicacies can scarcely be called excess of luxury to a man whose income is so large that such

gratifications do not prevent his making considerable savings.

CAROLINE.

Since, then, it is impossible to define what are and what are not luxuries, no general line of prohibition can be drawn. Yet it is surely much to be regretted, that excessive expenditure, so mischievous in its effects, should neither be restrained nor punished.

MRS. B.

The ruin which extravagance entails on the prodigal is his natural punishment, and serves as a warning to deter others from similar imprudence. Any attempt to prevent such partial evil by sumptuary laws, would, generally, tend to depress the efforts of industry. The desire of increasing our enjoyments, and of improving our situation in life, as it is one of the strongest sentiments implanted in our nature, so I conceive it to be essentially conducive to the general welfare. It is the active zeal of each individual exerted in his own cause, which, in the aggregate, gives an impulse to the progressive improvement of the world at large. The desire of bettering his condition is justly considered as a laudable disposition in a poor man, and it is a feeling dangerous to repress in any classes of society.

CAROLINE.

———— “ The man of wealth and pride  
“ Takes up a space that many poor supply’d ;  
“ Space for his lake, his park’s extensive bounds ;  
“ Space for his horses, equipage, and hounds ;  
“ The robe that wraps his limbs in silken sloth,  
“ Has robb’d the neighbouring fields of half their growth ;  
“ His seat, where solitary sports are seen,  
“ Indignant spurns the cottage from the green.”

What can you reply to these beautiful lines, Mrs. B. ? I fear they are but too faithful a representation of the state of society.

MRS. B.

I must first enquire whether this man of wealth and pride either spends or produces capital in order to procure these gratifications. If the former, he deserves all the censure we have bestowed upon the spendthrift. If the latter, his wealth may possibly be more increased by his industry than diminished by his luxury.

CAROLINE.

In all probability he does neither; but being possessed of a considerable property, he lives upon his income; and such an expensive style of living must greatly diminish, if not wholly absorb what he might otherwise economise.

MRS. B.

Still I cannot approve of compulsory measures

to lessen his expenses. If it be desirable to stimulate and encourage the industry of man, and induce him to accumulate wealth, he must be at full liberty to dispose of it according to his inclinations. It is unquestionably true, that unless the rich impoverish themselves by spending their capital, they cannot impoverish their country.

CAROLINE.

That is not enough ; the question is, what are the best means of enriching their country ?

MRS. B.

One man sits down contented with his little property ; brings up his children with humble views and desires, and every year lays by something to provide for their future support in life.

Another of a more ambitious character rises early and labours hard, exerting every faculty of his mind to turn his capital to the best account ; he likewise makes savings from his income, but they do not prevent his growing wealth from enabling him to spend more liberally, and enjoy more freely ; and none of his enjoyments is more heartfelt, than that of having raised his family in the world by the exertions of his industry.

CAROLINE.

Every man who is striving to acquire wealth is

certainly more or less actuated by the prospects of the various enjoyments which he hopes his increasing income will enable him to command. One wishes to become rich enough to marry; another to keep a carriage, or a country-house; a third to be able to settle his children respectably in the world.

MRS. B.

Such motives are strong incitements both to industry and frugality; and these useful habits often remain when the cause which gave rise to them no longer exists; it is far from uncommon to see men retain the taste for accumulating long after they have lost the inclination for spending.

Dr. Adam Smith observes, that before the introduction of refined luxuries, the English nobles had no other means of spending their wealth, than by maintaining in their houses a train of dependants, either in a state of absolute idleness, or whose only business was to indulge the follies or flatter the vanity of their patron; and this is in a great measure the case in Russia, Poland, and several other parts of Europe, even at the present day. We find that the consumption of provisions by the household of an English nobleman some centuries ago was perhaps a hundred times greater than it is at present. But you must not thence infer that the estate, which maintained such numerous re-

tainers, produces less now than it did in those times ; on the contrary, it is perhaps as much increased as the consumption of the household is diminished. The difference is, that the produce, instead of supporting a number of lazy dependants, maintains, probably a hundred times that number of industrious independent workmen, part of whom are employed in raising the produce of the estate, and part in supplying the nobleman with all the luxuries he requires : it was to obtain these luxuries, that he dismissed his train of dependants, that he improved the culture of his land, and that, whilst studying only the gratification of his wishes, he contributed so essentially to the welfare of his country.

Here is a passage in Paley's ~~Political~~ Philosophy on the subject of luxury, extremely worth your attention : —

“ It appears that the business of one half of  
“ mankind is to set the other half at work ; that is,  
“ to provide articles, which, by tempting the de-  
“ sires, may stimulate the industry, and call forth  
“ the activity of those upon the exertion of whose  
“ industry, and the application of whose faculties,  
“ the production of human provision depends.  
“ It signifies nothing to the main purpose of trade  
“ how superfluous the articles which it furnishes  
“ are, whether the want of them be real or imagin-  
“ ary ; whether it be founded in nature or in



“opinion, in fashion, habit, or emulation ; it is  
“enough that they be actually desired and sought  
“after. Flourishing cities are raised and supported  
“by trading in tobacco : populous towns subsist  
“by the manufactory of ribbons. A watch may be  
“a very unnecessary appendage to the dress of a  
“peasant, yet if the peasant will till the ground in  
“order to obtain a watch, the true design of trade  
“is answered ; and the watchmaker, whilst he po-  
“lishes the case, and files the wheels of his machine,  
“is contributing to the production of corn, as  
“effectually, though not so directly, as if he handled  
“the spade or the plough. If the fisherman will  
“ply his nets, or the mariner fetch rice from foreign  
“countries, in order to procure the indulgence of  
“the use of tobacco, the market is supplied with  
“two important articles of provision by the instru-  
“mentality of a merchandise which has no other  
“apparent use than the gratification of a vitiated  
“palate.”

## CAROLINE.

This reminds me of an anecdote in Dr. Frank-  
lin's works. He describes the admiration which  
was excited by a new cap worn at church by one  
of the young girls of Cape May. This piece of  
finery had come from Philadelphia ; and with a  
view of obtaining similar ornaments, the young girls  
had all set to knitting worsted mittens, an article

in request at Philadelphia, the sale of which enabled them to gratify their wishes.

MRS. B.

We often hear the poor reproached for aiming at things above their situation ; but I own that I delight in seeing them strive to ornament their cottages, to raise a few flowers amongst the nutritious vegetables in their gardens, to deck their room, though it be but with rows of damaged china cups, and plates, or a few gaudy prints ; it shows a desire of creditable appearance, and of aiming at something beyond the bare means of subsistence.

CAROLINE.

The desire of improving their condition is not, however, in all cases a sufficient motive to rouse the industry of the lower classes. I once knew an easy indulgent landed proprietor, who having no ambition to increase his income could never be induced to raise his rents ; his tenants, finding that they could pay their landlord and maintain their families as well as their neighbours, with much less labour, neglected their farms, and became so idle and disorderly, that the estate was the least productive of any in the county.

MRS. B.

The country thus suffered from the well-meant, but ill-judged indulgence of this landlord.

CAROLINE.

But why was not the industry of these tenants stimulated by the desire of raising themselves in the world, which the forbearance of their landlord enabled them so easily to do?

MRS. B.

In the course of time it probably would have had that effect; but when uneducated men obtain an increase of wealth, the first use they generally make of it is to procure indulgences and exemption from labour; it is only after becoming sensible that idleness leads them back to poverty, that they think of turning their wealth to better account. Well-educated people seldom require the experience of so severe a lesson, but amongst the lower classes it is not uncommon to find that a great, and especially a sudden accession of riches, terminates in ruin.

CAROLINE.

There are frequently instances of poor people being ultimately ruined by a high prize in the lottery.

MRS. B.

And the lower the state of ignorance and degradation of mind of the poor man who gains the prize, the more certain is his ruin. The different state of improvement of the lower classes in England, in Scotland, and in Ireland, are strongly ex-

emplified in this respect. If you were to give a guinea to a Scotch peasant, he would deliberately consider how he could turn it to the best account; he would perhaps buy a pig, or something that would bring a future profit. An English peasant is not quite so long sighted, yet he would contrive to derive some substantial advantages from the gift of a guinea; he would probably lay it out in repairing his cottage, or in purchasing some new clothes for his children. But the Irishman, whose joy would be the greatest of the three at such an unexpected acquisition of wealth, would in all likelihood spend the whole of it in drinking whiskey with his friends, and thus disable himself for the labour of the following day.

CAROLINE.

And do you suppose that a sudden and considerable increase of wages would be attended with mischievous effects to the labouring poor?

MRS. B.

In the first instance it probably would. In manufactures it is commonly found that an accidental increase of wages, arising from a sudden demand for workmen, is productive of intemperance and disorderly conduct; and this has been urged as a general objection to high wages; but this bad effect seldom takes place unless the augmentation be sudden and unlooked for, and it discontinues when

the high wages become regularly established. You may almost consider it as certain, that uneducated men will derive no advantage from such an augmentation of income as raises them suddenly above their accustomed habits of life. The beneficial effects I have described to you in one of our preceding conversations as arising from increasing wealth and demand for labour, must be gradual in order to prove useful to the lower classes.

CAROLINE.

All that you have said reconciles me, in a great measure, to the inequality of the distribution of wealth ; for it proves that, however great a man's possessions may be, it is decidedly advantageous to the country that he should still endeavour to augment them. Formerly I imagined that whatever addition was made to the wealth of the rich was so much subtracted from the pittance of the poor, but now I see that it is, on the contrary, an addition to the general stock of wealth of the country, by which the poor benefit equally with the rich.

MRS. B.

Yes ; every accession of wealth to a country must have not only employed labourers to produce it, but will in future employ other labourers in order that the proprietor may derive an income from it. For every increase of capital is the result of a past and the cause of a future augmentation of produce

therefore whatever a man's property may be, he should be encouraged to improve it. I will read you an eloquent passage in Bentham's *Théorie de la Législation* on the subject of luxury.

“ L'attrait du plaisir, la succession des besoins,  
“ le desir actif d'ajouter au bien être, produiront  
“ sans cesse, sous le régime de la sûreté, de nou-  
“ veaux efforts vers de nouvelles acquisitions. Les  
“ besoins, les jouissances, ces agens universels de la  
“ société, après avoir fait éclore les premières gerbes  
“ de blés, élèveront peu-à-peu les magasins de  
“ l'abondance toujours croissans et jamais remplis.  
“ Les desirs s'étendent avec les moyens ; l'horizon  
“ s'aggrandit, à mesure qu'on s'avance, et chaque  
“ besoin nouveau, également accompagné de sa  
“ peine et de son plaisir, devient un nouveau prin-  
“ cipe d'action ; l'opulence qui n'est qu'un terme  
“ comparatif n'arrête pas même ce mouvement,  
“ une fois qu'il est imprimé ; au contraire, plus  
“ on opère en grand, plus la recompense est  
“ grande, et par conséquent plus est grande  
“ aussi la force du motif qui anime l'homme au  
“ travail.

“ On a vu que l'abondance se forme peu-à-  
“ peu par l'opération continue des mêmes causes  
“ qui ont produit la subsistance. Il n'y a donc  
“ point d'opposition entre ces deux buts. Au con-  
“ traire, plus l'abondance augmente, plus on est sûr  
“ de la subsistance. Ceux qui blâment l'abondance

“ sous le nom de luxe n’ont jamais saisi cette con-  
“ sidération.

“ Les intempéries, les guerres, les accidens de  
“ toute espèce attaquent souvent le fond de la sub-  
“ sistance; en sorte qu’une société qui n’auroit pas  
“ de superflu et même beaucoup de superflu seroit  
“ sujette à manquer souvent du nécessaire; c’est ce  
“ qu’on voit chez les peuples sauvages. C’est ce qu’on  
“ a vu fréquemment chez toutes les nations dans  
“ les tems de l’antique pauvreté. C’est ce qui  
“ arrive encore de nos jours dans les pays peu  
“ favorisés de la nature, tels que la Suède, et dans  
“ ceux où le gouvernement contrarie les opérations  
“ du commerce au lieu de se borner à le protéger.  
“ Mais les pays où le luxe abonde et où l’adminis-  
“ tration est éclairée, sont à l’abri de la famine.  
“ Telle est l’heureuse situation de l’Angleterre.  
“ Des manufactures de luxe deviennent des  
“ bureaux d’assurances contre la disette. Une  
“ fabrique de bierre ou d’amidon se convertira en  
“ moyen de subsistance. Que de fois n’a-t-on pas  
“ déclamé contre les chevaux et le chiens comme  
“ dévorant la subsistance des hommes ! Ces pro-  
“ fonds politiques ne s’élèvent que d’un degré  
“ au dessus de ces apôtres du désintéressement, qui,  
“ pour ramener l’abondance des blés courent  
“ incendier les magasins.”

CAROLINE.

We had not yet considered luxury under this

point of view ; I confess that I was of the opinion of those who thought that dogs and horses devoured the subsistence of man, but I am much better pleased to think that the food which luxury raises for the nourishment of those animals may, in case of necessity, become nourishment for the human species ; and, if a famine should take place, even the animals themselves would afford a resource.

MRS. B.

Hair-powder we may consider as a kind of granary for the preservation of wheat, for though the powder would not, unless in cases of very great urgency, be converted into food, the quantity of corn annually grown for the purpose of making hair-powder would, during a moderate scarcity, find its way more readily to the baker's than to the perfumer's shop.

'CAROLINE.

And pray, Mrs. B., what do you think of the luxury of the Romans ? We read in Pliny of a Roman lady who was dressed in jewels to the amount of 300,000*l*. I recollect, also, an account of a dish of fish having cost 64*l*.

MRS. B.

These are but trifling instances of profusion, in comparison of some others related of the Romans.



Marc Antony expended 60,000*l.* in an entertainment given to Cleopatra. And the supper of Heliogabalus cost 6000*l.* every night. But *nothing* can be said in apology for the luxuries of the Romans; they were peculiarly objectionable, *because* their wealth did not proceed from industry, but from plunder. Their extravagance and profusion, therefore, far from being a spur to industry, acted in a contrary direction; it encouraged the love of rapine in themselves, whilst it depressed the spirit of industry in the countries subject to their power, by destroying the strongest of all inducements to labour, the security of property. It has been well observed by Macpherson, that “the luxuries of  
“the Romans cannot be considered as the summit  
“of a general scale of prosperity; it was a scale  
“graduated but by one division, which separated  
“immense wealth and power from abject slavery,  
“wretchedness and want.”

In considering the advantages to be derived from luxury, we must, however, carefully remember, that it acts in a twofold manner; whilst on the one hand it encourages industry, on the other it increases expenditure; so far as its productive powers prevail over its prodigal effects, it is beneficial to mankind; but in the contrary case it becomes an evil, and when it encroaches on capital we have seen that it is an evil of the greatest magnitude.

The grand object to be kept in view in order to

promote the general prosperity of the country, is the increase of capital. But it is not in the power of the legislature to promote this end in any other way than by providing for the security of property; any attempts to interfere either with the disposal of capital or with the nature and extent of expenditure, are equally discouraging to industry.

## CAROLINE.

Whoever, I conceive, augments his capital by savings from his income, increases the general stock of subsistence for the labouring classes; whilst he who spends part of his capital diminishes that stock of subsistence, and consequently the means of employing the labouring classes in its reproduction.

Every man ought, therefore, to consider it as a moral duty, independently of his private interest, to keep his expenditure so far within the limits of his income that he may be enabled every year to make some addition to his capital.

## MRS. B.

And the question what that addition should be, must depend entirely upon the extent of his income, and his motives for expenditure. We can only point out illiberal parsimony, and extravagant prodigality as extremes to be avoided; there are so many gradations in the scale between them, that every man must draw the line for himself, accord-

ing to the dictates of his good sense and his conscience, and in so doing should consult, perhaps, the moral philosopher as well as the political economist. He who has a large family to maintain and establish in the world, though more strict economy be required of him, cannot be expected to make savings equal to those of a man of a similar income, who has not the same calls for expenditure.

But however large a man's income may be, *he* has no apology for neglect of economy. Economy is a virtue incumbent on all; a rich man may have sufficient motives to authorise a liberal expenditure, but he can have none for negligence and waste; and however immaterial to himself the loss which waste occasions, he should consider it as so much taken from that fund which provides maintenance and employment for the poor.

---

# INDEX.

---

## A

**ACCUMULATION** of wealth, 89.

**Adulteration of the coin of the country**, 355.

its effects on wages, 356.

has been adopted in almost all countries, 357.

**Agriculture**, introduction of, 19. 43. 182.

whether preferable to other branches of industry, 184.

of the proportion it should bear to manufactures  
and commerce, 189.

most advantageous to newly settled countries, 190.

yields two incomes, 256.

Metayer system of, 256.

state of, in France, 257.

**Agricultural produce**, high price of, 204.

not susceptible of unlimited increase, 205.

causes of its high price, 210.

causes which lower its price, 213.

high price of, necessary to proportion the consump-  
tion to the supply, 231.

the first commodity which a country exports, 398.  
421.

**Alms-giving**, effects of, 175. 178.

**America**, increase of population in, 145.

exports corn, 398.

agriculture of, 421.

effects of its discovery on the industry of Europe, 547.

America, the produce of its mines how distributed throughout the world, 449.

Annuitants, affected by the exchangeable value of money, 338.

Art, advantages it has over the powers of nature, 188.

## B

Balance of trade, 433.

popular error respecting it, 445.

Banks, saving, advantages of, 173.

Banks, issuing notes, 360.

of Amsterdam, 360.

of England, 365.

restriction of paying in specie, 365.

Barter, origin of, 67.

Benefit clubs, or friendly societies, advantages resulting from, 171.

Bentham's *Théorie de Legislation*, extract from, on the effects of luxury, 475.

Bills of Exchange, their use in foreign commerce, 431.

Blackstone's *Commentaries*, extract from, on civil liberty, 45.

Bounty, on the exportation of goods, 401.

Buchanan's edition of Adam Smith's passage from, on price, 324.

## C

Canals, advantages arising from, 386. 388.

Capital, origin of, 89.

employment of, 92. 107.

profits derived from, 95. 99.

necessary for all productive enterprises, 100. 303.

fixed and circulating, distinction of, 108.

definition of, 119.

of a country, 118. 452.

effect of its increase on profit and wages, 127.

effect of its diminution, 150.

increase of, in Europe, 150.

increase of, in America, 144.

- Capital, various modes of employing it, 183.  
     required for agriculture, 238, 239.  
     lent at interest, 275.  
     quick return of, in the home-trade, 391.  
     expenditure of, 454.  
     increase of, always advantageous, 479.
- Cheapness, beneficial only when it arises from a low cost of  
     production, 320, 321.  
     only nominal when arising from scarcity of money,  
     334. 337.
- Circulating capital explained, 109.
- Civilisation, progress of, 46.
- Civilised state of society, 20.
- Clarke's (Dr.) Travels, extract from, on insecurity of pro-  
     perty, 57.
- Coined money, antiquity of, 329.  
     advantages of, 330.
- Coin, adulteration of, 355.
- Colonies, establishment of, 167.
- Commerce, a mode of employing capital, 374.  
     foreign, 389. 395.  
     advantages of, 393. 396.
- Competition of sellers reduces prices, 409.
- Consumption, distinguished from expenditure, 454.  
     of a country, 455.  
     productive and unproductive, 455.
- Corn, unknown origin of, 48.  
     -trade, 415.  
     home and foreign supply of, 416.  
     exportation of, 422.  
     natural high price of, 304.
- Cost of production of commodities, 301. 304.  
     component parts of, 305.  
     diminished, cause of cheapness, 320.
- Creditor, public, how repaid, 290.

## D

**Dairy, establishments of Fruitières in Switzerland, 260.**

**Debt, national, 290.**

**Demand, definition of, 124.**

for labour, on what it depends, 144.

for the necessities of life, 206.

and supply, 313.

**Depreciation of money, its effect on price, 353.**

**Division of labour, 73.**

passages from Adam Smith on, 72, 73. 76.

its effect on the moral and intellectual faculties, 87.

its effect in the multiplication of wealth, 88

## E

**Economy, 479.**

**Edinburgh Review, extract from, on small farms, 266.**

**Education of the poor, advantages of, 168.**

**Emigration, a resource for redundant population, 165.**

impolicy of restraining it, 168.

under some circumstances injurious to a country, 168.

**Employment of capital, 95. 122.**

**Exchange, bill of, its use in trade, 425.**

unfavourable, or below par, 428.

premium on, 428.

unfavourable, promotes exportation, 438.

how affected by depreciation of currency, 442.

nominal, 444.

**Exchangeable value, 299. 325,**

definition of, 299.

and natural value do not always coincide, 314.

of money, what classes of men affected by its variations, 339.

**Expenditure, 103. 451.**

distinguished from consumption, 454.

Expenditure of capital, its consequences, 293. 456.

Exportation of corn, under what circumstance advantageous,  
425.

F

Farmers, exposed to small risks, 201.

    require capital, 238.

    gentlemen, 251. 253.

Farms, small, objections to, 257.

    what size most advantageous, 264.

    size of, in Belgium and Tuscany, 265.

Fisheries, rent of, 271.

Fishing, capital required for it, 100.

Fixed capital, 110.

Foreign trade, 393.

    advantages of, 396, 397.

    advantages to both countries engaged in it, 407.

Franklin, passage from, on prohibitions in trade, 412.

    anecdote from, on the effects of luxury, 470.

Friendly societies, or benefit clubs, 173.

G

Gardens, for cottagers, 182.

Garnier, extract from, on the employment of capital, 192.

Gold, how paid for, 331.

    -coins, antiquity of, 328.

    -bullion, the standard of, value of coined money, 369.

    -bullion, high price of, 369.

    and silver, effect of its influx in Spain, 446, 447.

Goldsmith's Deserted Village, passages from, on small farms,  
257.

    on inclosures, 164.

    on emigration, 166.

    on luxury, 466.

Goods, community of, 62.



Governments; origin of, 19.  
 errors of, in political economy, 39.  
 despotic, effects of, 53, 54, 55. 57.

## H

Happiness, how influenced by wealth, 196.  
 Home trade, 388. 391.

## I

Ignorance of savages, 32.  
 Importation of corn, 419.  
 Income, or revenue, origin of, 95.  
     derived from profits, 101.  
 Industry, encouraged by security, 38.  
     of the Swiss, 63.  
     limited by extent of capital, 101. 161.  
     encouraged by emancipation, 110.  
         by high wages, 155.  
         by piece-work, 157.  
 Interest of money, 278.  
     diminishes, as wealth and population increase, 278.  
     varies in different countries, 282, 283.  
     low rate of, a sign of prosperity, 283.  
     impolicy of fixing it by law, 285.  
     in ancient times and countries, 182.  
     in the public funds, 288.

## J

Jesuits, their establishment in Paraguay, 62.

## L

Labour, its effect in the production of wealth, 31.  
     considered as a cause of value, 301.  
 Labourers, productive, 9.

- Labourers unproductive, 291.**  
**Land mortgaged, 277.**  
**Landed property, 35. 38.**  
**Laws, utility of, 40.**  
**Leases, their terms and duration, 242.**  
**Loans, to individuals, 275.**  
     to government, 286, 287.  
**Luxury, a relative term, 464.**  
     its excess only pernicious, 464.  
     promotes industry, 464.  
     a resource in scarcity, 477.  
     of the Romans, objection to, 478.  
     when beneficial, and when injurious, 477.

## M

- Machines, their effect in abridging labour, 75.**  
**Machinery, objections to it, 116.**  
     advantages derived from it, 117.  
**Macpherson's History of Commerce, extract from, on machinery, 117.**  
     on fixing the price of provisions, 135. 158.  
**Manufactures, their influence on population, 163.**  
     rate of their profits, 194.  
**Measures of value, all imperfect, 308. 336.**  
**Merchants, rate of their profits, 195.**  
**Metals, used only in civilised countries, 81.**  
**Metayer system of farming, 256.**  
     in Belgium and Tuscany, 265.  
**Mines, first worked in England, 81.**  
     in general, 265.  
     of coal, 268.  
     of metal, 270.  
     great risk attending them, 269

Mirabeau's Monarchie Prussienne, passage from, on free trade, 427.

Money lent at interest, 302.

in general, 325.

its use as a medium of exchange, 326.

various articles used for this purpose, 327.

coined, antiquity of, 328.

advantages of, 329.

its use as a standard of value, 329.

not an accurate standard of value, 332.

cheapness of commodities arising from its scarcity, 333.

dearness of commodities arising from its abundance, 335.

depreciation of, 337, 350.

variation in the exchangeable value of, 338.

has of late years fallen in value, 338, 352.

has real value, not merely a sign, 343.

impolicy of preventing its exportation, 344. 347.

effects of its free exportation, 348.

how it regulates price, 352.

its value in ancient times, 353.

adulteration of, 354.

of paper, no real value, 357.

excess of, creates depreciation, 366.

expedients for economising it, 367. 371.

Moravians, their institution, 453

Mortgage of land, 277.

## N

National debt, 290.

Natural value, 295.

of gold bullion, 332.

Nature, of the variety and profusion of her gifts, 40, 41. 45.  
assists the labours of man, 186.

**Necessaries of life, definition of, varies in different countries,**  
125.  
    **effects of redundancy of, 419.**  
    **Nominal cheapness, 334.**  
    **exchange, 444.**

## P

**Paley's Moral Philosophy, passage from, on accumulation of**  
    **wealth, 150.**  
    **on agriculture, 245.**  
    **on luxury, 469.**  
**Paper money, no real value, 357.**  
    **its effect in driving specie out of the country, 363.**  
    **excess of, creates depreciation, 366.**  
**Pastoral life, 19. 47.**  
**Piece-work stimulates industry, 156.**  
**Poor-rates, objections to, 173.**  
    **lowers the price of labour, 174.**  
**Political economy, errors arising from ignorance of its prin-**  
    **ciples, 7.**  
    **advantages arising from some of its principles, 11.**  
    **difficulties to be surmounted in this study, 14.**  
    **definition of, 18.**  
**Population, wages how affected by it, 125. 129.**  
    **rapid increase of, in America, 144.**  
    **in Europe, 145.**  
    **great, under what circumstances advantageous, 147.**  
    **effects of its increase beyond the means of subsist-**  
        **ence, 148.**  
    **naturally increases with capital, 156.**  
    **redundant, relieved by emigration, 164.**  
**Poverty, 100.**  
**Price, impolicy of the legislature interfering with it, 134.**

- Price of raw produce, how regulated, 215.**  
     and value, 295.  
     defined, 297.  
     generally equivalent to cost of production, 301.  
     how affected by scarcity of money, 327.  
     how affected by depreciation of money, 335.  
     various circumstances affecting it, 338.  
     how regulated, 348.  
     reduced by free competition of sellers, 409.
- Prodigality, its pernicious effects, 458.**
- Production, cost of, 301.**
- Productive labourers, 97. 291.**
- Profits, derived from the employment of capital, 97.**  
     of capital, 128.  
     decrease with increase of capital, 130.  
     tending to equality in all employments of capital, 195.  
     proportioned to the degrees of risk, 198.  
     circumstances which derange the equality of profits, 200.  
     of agriculture diminish as inferior soils are cultivated, 213.  
     of the farmer, how calculated, 240.  
     of mining, 270.  
     a component part of cost of production, 304.  
     great, of small dealers, 381.
- Promissory notes, 431.**
- Property, security of, 37.**  
     in land, 38, 39.  
     consequences of its establishment, 48, 49.  
     consequences of its insecurity, 53.  
     in common, objections to it, 59.  
     in land, effects of its extreme division, 238.

## R

- Rent, 213.**  
     effect of the high price of agricultural produce, 205.

- Rent**, derived from the surplus produce of agriculture, 208.  
    why not paid in new settlements, 209.  
    origin of, 212.  
    definition of, 214.  
    consequences of its abolition, 228. 251.  
    rise positively, but not relatively, 250.  
    of farms, 241.  
    of mines, 268.  
    of fisheries, 271.  
    a component part of cost production, 303.
- Revenue**, or income, origin of, 93. 104, 105.  
    modes of employing of capital to produce it, 182.  
    derived from property in land, 202.  
    derived from cultivation of land, 257.  
    of those who do not employ their capital themselves,  
        273.
- Rewards**, advantages of, 181.
- Riches**, of what they consist, 26.
- Rich and poor**, distinction between, 88.  
    contract between, 90. 95.

**S**

- Savings banks**, 173.
- Say's Political Economy**, extract from, on the invention of  
    printing, 117.  
    on prohibitions in trade, 411.
- Scarcity**, its effect on wages, 130.  
    its effect on price, 312.
- Security**, stimulus to industry, 33.
- Skill**, acquired by the division of labour, 73.  
    higher wages paid for it, 140.
- Slaves**, fixed capital, 110.
- Slavery**, discouraging to industry, 111.
- Smith, Adam**, passage from, on the division of labour, 73. 76.

America, the produce of its mines how distributed throughout the world, 449.

Annuitants, affected by the exchangeable value of money, 338.

Art, advantages it has over the powers of nature, 188.

## B

Balance of trade, 433.

popular error respecting it, 445.

Banks, saving, advantages of, 173.

Banks, issuing notes, 360.

of Amsterdam, 360.

of England, 365.

restriction of paying in specie, 365.

Barter, origin of, 67.

Benefit clubs, or friendly societies, advantages resulting from, 171.

Bentham's *Théorie de Legislation*, extract from, on the effects of luxury, 475.

Bills of Exchange, their use in foreign commerce, 431.

Blackstone's *Commentaries*, extract from, on civil liberty, 45.

Bounty, on the exportation of goods, 401.

Buchanan's edition of Adam Smith's passage from, on price, 324.

## C

Canals, advantages arising from, 386. 388.

Capital, origin of, 89.

employment of, 92. 107.

profits derived from, 95. 99.

necessary for all productive enterprises, 100. 303.

fixed and circulating, distinction of, 108.

definition of, 119.

of a country, 118. 452.

effect of its increase on profit and wages, 127.

effect of its diminution, 130.

increase of, in Europe, 150.

increase of, in America, 144.

- Rent**, derived from the surplus produce of agriculture, 208.  
    why not paid in new settlements, 209.  
    origin of, 212.  
    definition of, 214.  
    consequences of its abolition, 228. 231.  
    rise positively, but not relatively, 230.  
    of farms, 241.  
    of mines, 268.  
    of fisheries, 271.  
    a component part of cost production, 303.
- Revenue**, or income, origin of, 93. 104, 105.  
    modes of employing of capital to produce it, 182.  
    derived from property in land, 202.  
    derived from cultivation of land, 257.  
    of those who do not employ their capital themselves,  
        273.
- Rewards**, advantages of, 181.
- Riches**, of what they consist, 26.
- Rich and poor**, distinction between, 88.  
    contract between, 90. 95.

**S**

- Savings banks**, 173.
- Say's Political Economy**, extract from, on the invention of  
    printing, 117.  
    on prohibitions in trade, 411.
- Scarcity**, its effect on wages, 130.  
    its effect on price, 312.
- Security**, stimulus to industry, 33.
- Skill**, acquired by the division of labour, 73.  
    higher wages paid for it, 140.
- Slaves**, fixed capital, 110.
- Slavery**, discouraging to industry, 111.
- Smith, Adam**, passage from, on the division of labour, 73. 76.



## D

- Dairy, establishments of Fruitières in Switzerland, 260.**  
**Debt, national, 290.**  
**Demand, definition of, 124.**  
     for labour, on what it depends, 144.  
     for the necessities of life, 206.  
     and supply, 313.  
**Depreciation of money, its effect on price, 353.**  
**Division of labour, 73.**  
     passages from Adam Smith on, 72, 73. 76.  
     its effect on the moral and intellectual faculties, 83.  
     its effect in the multiplication of wealth, 88

## E

- Economy, 479.**  
**Edinburgh Review, extract from, on small farms, 266.**  
**Education of the poor, advantages of, 168.**  
**Emigration, a resource for redundant population, 165.**  
     impolicy of restraining it, 168.  
     under some circumstances injurious to a country, 168.  
**Employment of capital, 95. 122.**  
**Exchange, bill of, its use in trade, 425.**  
     unfavourable, or below par, 428.  
     premium on, 428.  
     unfavourable, promotes exportation, 438.  
     how affected by depreciation of currency, 442.  
     nominal, 444.  
**Exchangeable value, 299. 325,**  
     definition of, 299.  
     and natural value do not always coincide, 314.  
     of money, what classes of men affected by its variations, 339.  
**Expenditure, 103. 451.**  
     distinguished from consumption, 454.

Expenditure of capital, its consequences, 293. 456.

Exportation of corn, under what circumstance advantageous,  
425.

F

Farmers, exposed to small risks, 201.

    require capital, 238.

    gentlemen, 251. 253.

Farms, small, objections to, 257.

    what size most advantageous, 264.

    size of, in Belgium and Tuscany, 265.

Fisheries, rent of, 271.

Fishing, capital required for it, 100.

Fixed capital, 110.

Foreign trade, 393.

    advantages of, 396, 397.

    advantages to both countries engaged in it, 407.

Franklin, passage from, on prohibitions in trade, 412.

    anecdote from, on the effects of luxury, 470.

Friendly societies, or benefit clubs, 173.

G

Gardens, for cottagers, 182.

Garnier, extract from, on the employment of capital, 192.

Gold, how paid for, 331.

    -coins, antiquity of, 328.

    -bullion, the standard of, value of coined money, 369.

    -bullion, high price of, 369.

    and silver, effect of its influx in Spain, 446, 447.

Goldsmith's Deserted Village, passages from, on small farms,  
257.

    on inclosures, 164.

    on emigration, 166.

    on luxury, 466.

Goods, community of, 62.

Governments; origin of, 19.  
 errors of, in political economy, 22.  
 despotic, effects of, 53, 54, 55. 57.

## H

Happiness, how influenced by wealth, 196.  
 Home trade, 388. 391.

## I

Ignorance of savages, 32.  
 Importation of corn, 419.  
 Income, or revenue, origin of, 95.  
     derived from profits, 101.  
 Industry, encouraged by security, 58.  
     of the Swiss, 63.  
     limited by extent of capital, 101. 161.  
     encouraged by emancipation, 110.  
         by high wages, 155.  
         by piece-work, 157.  
 Interest of money, 278.  
     diminishes, as wealth and population increase, 278.  
     varies in different countries, 282, 285.  
     low rate of, a sign of prosperity, 283.  
     impolicy of fixing it by law, 285.  
     in ancient times and countries, 182.  
     in the public funds, 288.

## J

Jesuits, their establishment in Paraguay, 62.

## L

Labour, its effect in the production of wealth, 31.  
     considered as a cause of value, 301.  
 Labourers, productive, 9.

- Labourers unproductive, 291.**
- Land mortgaged, 277.**
- Landed property, 35. 38.**
- Laws, utility of, 40.**
- Leases, their terms and duration, 242.**
- Loans, to individuals, 275.**
  - to government, 286, 287.
- Luxury, a relative term, 464.**
  - its excess only pernicious, 464.
  - promotes industry, 464.
  - a resource in scarcity, 477.
  - of the Romans, objection to, 478.
  - when beneficial, and when injurious, 477.

## M

- Machines, their effect in abridging labour, 75.**
- Machinery, objections to it, 116.**
  - advantages derived from it, 117.
- Macpherson's History of Commerce, extract from, on machinery, 117.**
  - on fixing the price of provisions, 135. 136.
- Manufactures, their influence on population, 163.**
  - rate of their profits, 194.
- Measures of value, all imperfect, 308. 336.**
- Merchants, rate of their profits, 195.**
- Metals, used only in civilised countries, 81.**
- Metayer system of farming, 256.**
  - in Belgium and Tuscany, 265.
- Mines, first worked in England, 81.**
  - in general, 265.
  - of coal, 268.
  - of metal, 270.
  - great risk attending them, 269

Mirabeau's Monarchie Prussienne, passage from, on free trade,  
427.

Money lent at interest, 302.

in general, 325.

its use as a medium of exchange, 326.

various articles used for this purpose, 327.

coined, antiquity of, 328.

advantages of, 329.

its use as a standard of value, 329.

not an accurate standard of value, 332.

cheapness of commodities arising from its scarcity,  
333.

dearness of commodities arising from its abundance,  
335.

depreciation of, 337, 350.

variation in the exchangeable value of, 338.

has of late years fallen in value, 338, 352.

has real value, not merely a sign, 343.

impolicy of preventing its exportation, 344. 347.

effects of its free exportation, 348.

how it regulates price, 352.

its value in ancient times, 353.

adulteration of, 354.

of paper, no real value, 357.

excess of, creates depreciation, 366.

expedients for economising it, 367. 371.

Moravians, their institution, 463

Mortgage of land, 277.

## N

National debt, 290.

Natural value, 295.

of gold bullion, 332.

Nature, of the variety and profusion of her gifts, 40, 41. 43.  
assists the labours of man, 186.

**Necessaries of life, definition of, varies in different countries,**  
125.  
effects of redundancy of, 419.  
**Nominal cheapness, 334.**  
exchange, 444.

## P

**Paley's Moral Philosophy, passage from, on accumulation of**  
wealth, 150.  
on agriculture, 245.  
on luxury, 469.  
**Paper money, no real value, 357.**  
its effect in driving specie out of the country, 363.  
excess of, creates depreciation, 366.  
**Pastoral life, 19. 47.**  
**Piece-work stimulates industry, 156.**  
**Poor-rates, objections to, 173.**  
lowers the price of labour, 174.  
**Political economy, errors arising from ignorance of its prin-**  
ciples, 7.  
advantages arising from some of its principles, 11.  
difficulties to be surmounted in this study, 14.  
definition of, 18.  
**Population, wages how affected by it, 125. 129.**  
rapid increase of, in America, 144.  
in Europe, 145.  
great, under what circumstances advantageous, 147.  
effects of its increase beyond the means of subsist-  
ence, 148.  
naturally increases with capital, 156.  
redundant, relieved by emigration, 164.  
**Poverty, 100.**  
**Price, impolicy of the legislature interfering with it, 134.**

- Price of raw produce, how regulated, 215.**  
     and value, 295.  
     defined, 297.  
     generally equivalent to cost of production, 301.  
     how affected by scarcity of money, 327.  
     how affected by depreciation of money, 335.  
     various circumstances affecting it, 338.  
     how regulated, 348.  
     reduced by free competition of sellers, 409.
- Prodigality, its pernicious effects, 458.**
- Production, cost of, 301.**
- Productive labourers, 97. 291.**
- Profits, derived from the employment of capital, 97.**  
     of capital, 128.  
     decrease with increase of capital, 130.  
     tending to equality in all employments of capital, 195.  
     proportioned to the degrees of risk, 198.  
     circumstances which derange the equality of profits, 200.  
     of agriculture diminish as inferior soils are cultivated, 213.  
     of the farmer, how calculated, 240.  
     of mining, 270.  
     a component part of cost of production, 304.  
     great, of small dealers, 381.
- Promissory notes, 431.**
- Property, security of, 37.**  
     in land, 38, 39.  
     consequences of its establishment, 48, 49.  
     consequences of its insecurity, 53.  
     in common, objections to it, 59.  
     in land, effects of its extreme division, 238.

## R

- Rent, 213.**  
     effect of the high price of agricultural produce, 205.

- Rent**, derived from the surplus produce of agriculture, 208.  
    why not paid in new settlements, 209.  
    origin of, 212.  
    definition of, 214.  
    consequences of its abolition, 228. 251.  
    rise positively, but not relatively, 250.  
    of farms, 241.  
    of mines, 268.  
    of fisheries, 271.  
    a component part of cost production, 303.
- Revenue**, or income, origin of, 93. 104, 105.  
    modes of employing of capital to produce it, 182.  
    derived from property in land, 202.  
    derived from cultivation of land, 257.  
    of those who do not employ their capital themselves,  
        273.
- Rewards**, advantages of, 181.
- Riches**, of what they consist, 26.
- Rich and poor**, distinction between, 88.  
    contract between, 90. 95.

**S**

- Savings banks**, 173.
- Say's Political Economy**, extract from, on the invention of  
    printing, 117.  
    on prohibitions in trade, 411.
- Scarcity**, its effect on wages, 130.  
    its effect on price, 312.
- Security**, stimulus to industry, 33.
- Skill**, acquired by the division of labour, 73.  
    higher wages paid for it, 140.
- Slaves**, fixed capital, 110.
- Slavery**, discouraging to industry, 111.
- Smith, Adam**, passage from, on the division of labour, 73. 76.



- Price of raw produce, how regulated, 215.**  
     and value, 295.  
     defined, 297.  
     generally equivalent to cost of production, 301.  
     how affected by scarcity of money, 327.  
     how affected by depreciation of money, 335.  
     various circumstances affecting it, 338.  
     how regulated, 348.  
     reduced by free competition of sellers, 409.
- Prodigality, its pernicious effects, 458.**
- Production, cost of, 301.**
- Productive labourers, 97. 291.**
- Profits, derived from the employment of capital, 97.**  
     of capital, 128.  
     decrease with increase of capital, 130.  
     tending to equality in all employments of capital, 195.  
     proportioned to the degrees of risk, 198.  
     circumstances which derange the equality of profits, 200.  
     of agriculture diminish as inferior soils are cultivated, 213.  
     of the farmer, how calculated, 240.  
     of mining, 270.  
     a component part of cost of production, 304.  
     great, of small dealers, 381.
- Promissory notes, 451.**
- Property, security of, 37.**  
     in land, 38, 59.  
     consequences of its establishment, 48, 49.  
     consequences of its insecurity, 55.  
     in common, objections to it, 59.  
     in land, effects of its extreme division, 238.

## R

- Rent, 213.**  
     effect of the high price of agricultural produce, 205.

- Rent**, derived from the surplus produce of agriculture, 208.  
why not paid in new settlements, 209.  
origin of, 212.  
definition of, 214.  
consequences of its abolition, 228. 231.  
rise positively, but not relatively, 250.  
of farms, 241.  
of mines, 268.  
of fisheries, 271.  
a component part of cost production, 303.
- Revenue**, or income, origin of, 93. 104, 105.  
modes of employing of capital to produce it, 182.  
derived from property in land, 202.  
derived from cultivation of land, 257.  
of those who do not employ their capital themselves,  
273.
- Rewards**, advantages of, 181.
- Riches**, of what they consist, 26.
- Rich and poor**, distinction between, 88.  
contract between, 90. 95.

**S**

- Savings banks**, 173.
- Say's Political Economy**, extract from, on the invention of  
printing, 117.  
on prohibitions in trade, 411.
- Scarcity**, its effect on wages, 130.  
its effect on price, 312.
- Security**, stimulus to industry, 33.
- Skill**, acquired by the division of labour, 73.  
higher wages paid for it, 140.
- Slaves**, fixed capital, 110.
- Slavery**, discouraging to industry, 111.
- Smith, Adam**, passage from, on the division of labour, 73. 76.

